

No. F 73.68.S7S5

Copy 2



GIVEN BY

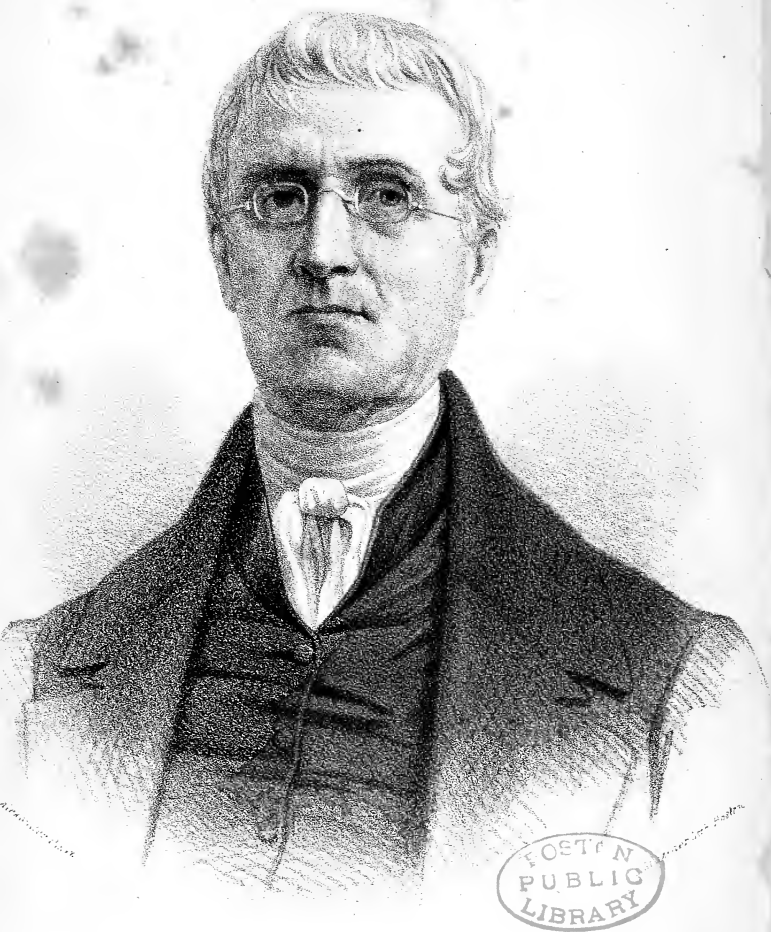
**BOSTON  
PUBLIC  
LIBRARY**







~~PROPERTY OF THE~~  
~~MAINE GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY~~  
~~INCORPORATED 1884~~



*Cyrus Alger*

Printed at J.H. Buffords.

HISTORY  
OF  
SOUTH BOSTON;  
FORMERLY  
Dorchester Neck,  
NOW  
WARD XII. OF THE CITY OF BOSTON.

---

BY THOMAS C. SIMONDS.

---

BOSTON:  
DAVID CLAPP.....OVER 184 WASHINGTON STREET.

1857.

8347

\* F73  
.68  
.5755  
Copy 2

PROPERTY OF THE  
MAINE GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY,  
INCORPORATED 1884.

2063.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1857, by

DAVID CLAPP,

in the Clerk's Office of the District Court for the District of Massachusetts.

2357.15

Itallace copy

Belling

Feb. 12 1923

D

## PREFACE.

---

MUCH of the following History was written for the columns of the "South Boston Gazette and Dorchester Chronicle," and was printed in that paper, at irregular intervals, during the years 1850 and 1851. The writer, since deceased, was peculiarly well qualified for this species of authorship; it was a work in which he took great delight, and no pains were spared in diligent research and careful preparation of materials. It was his intention to collate these scattered chapters of the "History of Mattapanock," as he styled them, at some future period, and publish them in a book, with such alterations and additions as might be found necessary or expedient. The sudden failure of his health, in the summer of 1856, induced him to do this earlier than he had intended, and the whole of the printed matter which he thought suitable to re-publish in this form was carefully prepared for the press before he was wholly confined to a sick-bed.

Early in the year 1857, an arrangement was made by him with the present Publisher to issue the work during the ensuing summer, with the hope of all that he might live to see it completed. But a wise Providence determined otherwise; he died March 2d, 1857, when but little more than twenty-four years of age, and this work now follows his premature and lamented decease—his name not more lastingly impressed upon its title-page than it is cherished in the affectionate remembrance and esteem of his many friends.

The printing of the work was begun, with little thought of adding to the matter then contained in it, or of including any other

engravings than an ancient Plan of Dorchester Neck and a View of the Lawrence Enclosure; and an edition of a few hundred copies, it was supposed, would suffice for the demand. As it progressed, however, it was found that additional matters of interest might be advantageously included, as well as various illustrations. These have augmented the expense of publication materially, and may increase the demand for the book; but as the printing had considerably advanced, neither the expense nor the anticipated demand could be met by an enlargement of the edition.

In obtaining additional information with which to enrich the "History," and in a general supervision of the whole as it has passed through the press, ALVAN SIMONDS, Esq., and Mr. JOSEPH H. SIMONDS, have given much time and valuable labor.

For most of the sketches of "distinguished citizens," the reader is indebted to the pen of the Rev. LEMUEL CAPEN, whose long and familiar acquaintance with the individuals, and acknowledged skill and impartiality in the delineation of character, eminently qualified him for writing these memoirs of some of the Fathers of our Peninsula.

To all others who have aided in supplying materials for this little work, either recently or to the deceased author in his original efforts, many thanks are cheerfully tendered. Messrs. FRANK HEDGE and JOHN ANDREW, whose fine wood engravings add much to its embellishment, as well as all concerned in furnishing the beautifully executed portraits, are deserving of praise.

The work is now submitted, by the Publisher, to the citizens of South Boston, in the hope that it may make known and preserve to them a knowledge of persons and events which should not be suffered to pass into oblivion; and that, though it be found incomplete in many respects, its errors may prove few and unimportant.

AUGUST 1, 1857.

# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

Mattapan Settled and called Dorchester—Mattapan- nock called Dorchester Neck . . . . .	9
---	---

## CHAPTER II.

Division of Mattapannock . . . . .	18
------------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER III.

First Settlers of Mattapannock . . . . .	31
--	----

## CHAPTER IV.

First Settlers of Mattapannock, continued . . . .	40
---	----

## CHAPTER V.

Dorchester Heights—Revolutionary Events . . . .	45
---	----

## CHAPTER VI.

Further Settlement of Mattapannock . . . . .	67
--	----

## CHAPTER VII.

Annexation to Boston . . . . .	72
--------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER VIII.

Bridges and Avenues . . . . .	80
-------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER IX.

Bridges and Avenues, continued . . . . .	94
--	----

## CHAPTER X.

War with England—Public Execution . . . . .	104
---	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

Schools and School-houses . . . . .	111
-------------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

Schools, continued . . . . .	133
------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

Schools, continued . . . . .	145
------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIV.

Churches . . . . .	154
--------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XV.

Churches, continued . . . . .	163
-------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XVI.

Mattapan Literary Association—Blind Asylum— School for Idiots . . . . .	182
--	-----

## CHAPTER XVII.

Streets . . . . .	194
-------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XVIII.

Manufactories . . . . .	204
-------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIX.

Miscellaneous . . . . .	216
-------------------------	-----



## CHAPTER XX.

Early Inhabitants—Statistics of Population, &c.— Municipal Government . . . . .	228
--	-----

## CHAPTER XXI.

Distinguished Citizens . . . . .	238
----------------------------------	-----

## APPENDIX.

A.—Memorial of the Committee of the Town of Dorchester against Annexation . . . . .	277
B.—Memorial of Petitioners in favor of Annexation	279
C.—Act annexing Dorchester Neck to Boston . . . . .	282
D.—Land owned by Mr. Gould—Foster Estate . . . . .	284
E.—Act in part authorizing the Erection of Boston South Bridge . . . . .	288
F.—Act establishing a Free Bridge in the City of Boston . . . . .	292
G.—Extracts from the Will of John Hawes . . . . .	295
H.—Instruction of Laura Bridgman . . . . .	297
I.—South Boston Memorial, in 1847 . . . . .	300
J.—Act to annex Washington Village to Boston . . . . .	313
New Census of Voters . . . . .	315
Resignation of Ministers, &c. . . . .	316

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

PORTRAIT OF CYRUS ALGER, ESQ. . . . .	Frontispiece.
PORTRAIT OF HON. ISAAC ADAMS . . . . .	p. 206
PLAN OF DORCHESTER NECK IN 1775 . . . . .	31
PLAN OF SOUTH BOSTON IN 1857 . . . . .	196
VIEW OF THE LAWRENCE ENCLOSURE AT MT. AUBURN	140
VIEW OF THE BIGELOW SCHOOL-HOUSE . . . . .	148
VIEW OF THE LAWRENCE SCHOOL-HOUSE . . . . .	148
VIEW OF THE MT. WASHINGTON FEMALE INSTITUTE	153
VIEW OF THE DWELLING-HOUSE OF CAPT. NOAH BROOKS . . . . .	265

# HISTORY OF SOUTH BOSTON.

---

## CHAPTER I.

MATTAPAN SETTLED AND CALLED DORCHESTER—  
MATTAPANNOCK CALLED DORCHESTER NECK.

IN the early part of the year 1630, a party of pious persons, chiefly residents of the counties of Devon, Dorset and Somerset, in England, came to the decision to emigrate to North America. Accordingly, they held a meeting at Plymouth, and set apart a day for solemn fasting and prayer to seek the divine approbation and assistance. They chose the Rev. John Maverick and the Rev. John Wareham to be their ministers.

Arrangements were immediately made for their emigration; and on the 20th day of March, the company set sail in the ship *Mary and John*, of 400 tons, commanded by Capt. Squeb. They encountered a violent storm on their passage, but yet, as recorded by one of their number, "they came by the good hand of the Lord, through the deeps comfortably." In a poem written by Gov. Wolcott, son of Roger Wolcott, one of the passengers, some particulars of the voyage are narrated. This poem is to be found

in the Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society, Vol. IV., pages 262—298. We select from it the following account of the storm to which we have referred.

“ The winds awhile  
Are courteous, and conduct them on their way,  
To near the midst of the Atlantic sea,  
When suddenly their pleasing gales they change  
For dismal storms that on the ocean range.  
Meanwhile our founders in the cabin sat,  
Reflecting on their truly sad estate,  
Whilst holy Wareham’s sacred lips did treat  
About God’s promises and mercies great.  
And now a mighty sea the ship o’ertakes,  
Which, falling on the deck, the bulk-head breaks ;  
The sailors cling to ropes, and frightened cry,  
‘ The ship is foundered ! Oh, we die, we die ! ’  
Those in the cabin heard the sailors screech,  
All rise, and reverend Wareham do beseech,  
That he would now uplift to heaven a cry  
For preservation in extremity.  
He, with a faith sure bottom’d on the Word  
Of Him that was of seas and winds the Lord,  
His eye lifts up to Heaven, his hand extends,  
And fervent prayers for deliverance sends.  
The winds abate, the threatening waves appease,  
And a sweet calm sits regent on the seas.  
They bless the name of their deliverer,  
And now they found a God that heareth prayer.”

The remainder of the poem is very interesting, and gives an account of the motives which actuated these persons to remove to a wilderness, as also an excellent description of the voyage.

Suffice it to say, that

“ Religion was the cause that did incline  
And moved our founders to this great design.”

It was on the 29th of May, Old Style, 1630, that this company arrived on the coast of Massachusetts. It was the last day of the week, and as the rays of the setting sun gilded the land which was in future to be their home, they were very desirous that they might land, that the rest of the Sabbath might not be disturbed. The wind was favorable, and every thing seemed propitious to enable the pilgrims to land ere the day was totally spent. But the captain not knowing the channel, and fearing lest there might not be a sufficient depth of water for his vessel, cast anchor for the night.

According to the agreement, the captain was to land them on the Charles River. Yet in spite of his promises, and in disregard of their veneration for the Lord's Day, and their repeated protestations against the course he was pursuing, the whole company were obliged to land with their goods on Nantasket Point. The captain was afterwards obliged to pay damages for this act.

From their known habits, we can have no doubt that their first act on landing was to kneel in prayer to Him who had thus far been a God to them. Sweetly must the subdued supplication of the beloved Wareham have floated on the air. Landed on a shore far different from what they expected, knowing not which way to proceed, nor how to act, we may suppose that the prayers offered on that day came from lips that offered no mock service.

In imagination, we think we hear the voices of those who had left friends and home to seek an asylum in the wilds of America, uplifted in prayer and praise. Fervently do they supplicate for protection, and with gratitude do they offer up thanks for their safe arrival; and

“As the sounding aisles of the dim woods rang  
To the anthems of the free,”

solemn and impressive must have been the scene.

Thus left to provide for themselves, they succeeded in procuring a boat from an old planter, probably John Oldham, who had left Plymouth Colony, and had settled at Nantasket. This man afterwards united with the company. On Monday forenoon, Captain Southcoat, Roger Clap, and eight other able-bodied men, were appointed to take the boat and visit Mishawaum, at the mouth of Charles River, and ascertain whether they could be there accommodated. In the mean time, other parties were despatched in various directions, to spy out the land. On Wednesday, a part of the company sailed up a bay now called, from that circumstance, Old Harbor, and seeing that the peninsula, now known as South Boston, was a favorable place for the pasturage of cattle, they immediately decided to settle in Mattapan, afterwards called Dorchester. By this means they could enjoy the use of Mattapannock, as it was called by the Indians, or Mattapan neck.

That this was the cause of their settlement in Mattapan, is proved by the following passage from the “Annals” of the town of Dorchester:—

“They had not stayed here at Watertown but a few days but y<sup>e</sup> rest of their Company below had found out a neck of land Joyning to a place called by y<sup>e</sup> Indians Mattapan, that was a fit place to turn their cattle upon to prevent their straying: So they sent to their friends to come away from Watertown, and they settled at Mattapan, and turned their Cattle upon y<sup>e</sup> Sd neck then called Mattapannock, now called Dorchester Neck.”

From Prince’s New England Chronology we also copy the following record:—

"May 30th (Lord's Day), Mr. Wareham, Maverick, Rossiter, and Ludlow, arrived at Nantasket. Capt. Squeb puts them and their goods on shore at Nantasket Point, and leaves them to shift for themselves. But getting a boat of some old planters, they lade her with goods, and some able-bodied men, well armed, go up to Charlestown, where we find some wigwams, some few English, and one house with an old planter who can speak Indian. We go up Charles River until it grows narrow and shallow, and there with much labor land our goods, the banks being steep. Our Captain is Mr. Southcot, a brave low country soldier, but we are not above ten in number. But are not there many days before we have orders to come away from this place, which is after called Watertown, to Matapan (so spelt in this record, but in those made afterwards written with two t's), because there is a neck fit for to keep cattle on."

It would thus appear, that to the benefits supposed to be gained by having Mattapanock as a pasture ground for cattle, Dorchester is indebted for its early settlement.

The settlers immediately went to work, and for several days "the setting up of cottages, booths and tents" for the shelter of their families, occupied their attention.

Many of the first settlers of Dorchester were "persons of note and figure, being dignified with the title of Mr., which but few in those days were." Quite a number of these men were traders, and when they first selected Dorchester as their residence, intended it as a place of commerce. They accordingly built a fort near the water-side, and mounted several cannon; but on account of the poor

channel and difficult landing, it was thought best to desist from their design, and not a few afterwards removed to Boston, which soon became a place of some commercial importance.

The first settlers landed near the neck, between Mattapan and Mattapannock, and there built their town. Says Blake, "These first settlers set down pretty thick together at the northerly end of the town, next the aforesaid neck of land, and on the easterly side of the sea." This was necessary in order that they might be near their cattle.

Arriving at too late a period to plant even common legumes, they soon came to want. The habitations they had erected were very uncomfortable, and quite a number were obliged to live in tents. In the early part of 1631, bread failed in every house in the settlements except that of the Governor. The people ate muscles, clams and ground-nuts, and of these even they had but a limited supply. Accustomed to the best of fare, and to comfortable habitations, it must have proved a great hardship for these "persons of good rank and circumstances in their native country." They endured great suffering, and yet they murmured not. Though cast down, still they were not overcome; trusting in an Almighty arm, they felt a strength of soul, and a mighty courage, which enabled them to brave every danger. Their privations and sufferings are thus described by Capt. Roger Clap, in his "Memoirs." "O! the hunger that many suffered, and saw no hope in the eye of reason to be supplied only by clams, muscles and fish. We did quickly build boats, and some went a fishing: but bread was with many a scarce thing, and flesh of all kinds as scarce."

Feeling that God alone could aid them in their



troubles, they set apart February sixth as a day of fasting and prayer. Before the day came, however, they were relieved from their want and distress. The Governor, who had forseen that provisions would be needed, had sent to Ireland for a supply. The arrival of the "Lion," laden with food, on the fifth of February, prevented the colony from *perishing by famine*. This unexpected supply of provisions excited anew the hopes of the colonists, and the sixth of February was observed as a day of Thanksgiving and Praise, instead of a day of Fasting.

Roger Clap, in his "Memoirs," thus makes mention of the arrival of a supply of provisions:—

"And in those Days, in our Straits, though I cannot say God sent a Raven to feed us, as He did the prophet Elijah; yet this I can say to the Praise of God's Glory, that he sent not only poor ravenous Indians, which came with their Baskets of Corn on their Backs, to Trade with us; but also sent ships from Holland and Ireland with Provisions, and Indian corn from Virginia, to supply the Wants of his dear Servants in this Wilderness, both for Food and Rayment. And when Peoples Wants were great, not only in one Town but in divers Towns, such was the godly Wisdom, Care and Prudence (not Selfishness, but Self-Denial) of our Governour Winthrop and his Assistants, that when a Ship came laden with Provisions, they did order that the whole Cargo should be bought for a General Stock; and so accordingly it was, and distribution was made to every Town, and to every Person in each Town, as every Man had need. Thus God was pleased to care for his People in Times of Straits, and to fill his Servants with Food and Gladness. Then did all the Servants of God bless his holy Name, and love one another with pure Hearts fervently."

During the year 1631, the arrival of several ships increased the number of the colonists, and likewise augmented their stock of provisions, as each vessel brought food for the settlement. Our ancestors also reaped a plentiful harvest at the close of the season, and although they had enough and to spare, yet they practised the greatest economy, not knowing what was before them. One of their number thus writes: "We were taught by our many trials and sufferings to stoop to a wilderness condition, which we had freely chosen to ourselves for the quiet of our own minds and the good of posterity." The affairs of the colony appeared very prosperous, and those who but the year before had felt fearful lest the settlement would be abandoned, now looked forward with hope to the time when it should become a stronghold of those religious principles, for the free exercise of which they had left their native land and braved the dangers of the wilderness.

The years 1631 and 1632 were mostly occupied in settling the affairs of the colony, in building habitations, and in establishing a body to make laws, to provide for the common defence, and carry into operation all measures which it might be thought best to adopt. Says Blake, in his "Annals," which contain nearly all the authentic history of the settlement of Dorchester extant, "These years were spent in working themselves into Settlements, & Incorporating into a Body to carry on y<sup>e</sup> Public Affairs of y<sup>e</sup> Plantation; in Granting many Parcels of Land & Meadow to I suppose every particular Person; but for y<sup>e</sup> House-lots where they first Set down, we have no Records of them, they being taken up as aforesaid."

It is believed that the form of government or

Town organization, which has prevailed in New England for the last two centuries, and which has contributed so much to the well-being of society, had its origin in the town of Dorchester. The settlers of this town in 1633 began the practice of electing Selectmen to provide for the best interests of the colony, and to put into execution all laws that might be made. Says Blake, "This year (1633) this Plantation began y<sup>e</sup> Practice of Choosing men, that we now call Selectmen or Townsmen. They Chose 12 this year to order y<sup>e</sup> Affairs of y<sup>e</sup> Plantation, who were to have their Monthly Meeting, and their orders being Confirmed by y<sup>e</sup> Plantation were of full force and being to y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants. There were many orders made this year concerning Cattle and Fences, &c., & Penalties annexed; besides many grants of Land."

On the 16th of August, 1635, the Rev. Richard Mather arrived at Boston. This distinguished clergyman, of whom we shall speak at greater length hereafter, was accompanied with one hundred other persons desirous of settling in New England. Blake says, "Arriued here on Aug. 16th, the Revd. Mr. Richard Mather, that was a long time after Pastor of this Church, and with him a great Number of Godly People that Settled here with him. There came with him 100 Passengers, & 23 Seamen, 23 Cows and Heifers, 3 Sucking Calues, and 8 Mares, & none Died by y<sup>e</sup> way, though they met with as terrible a storm as was almost ever heard of." Immediately on his arrival, Mr. Mather received invitations to settle at Plymouth, Roxbury, and Dorchester. By the advice of his friends, Cotton and Hooker, he chose the latter place.

The following is a record made of this year by

Blake. "This year made great alteration in y<sup>e</sup> town of Dorchester, for Mr. Mather & y<sup>e</sup> Godly people that came with him from Lancashire wanting a place to settle in, some of y<sup>e</sup> People of Dorchester were willing to remoue and make room for them, and so Mr. Warham & about half y<sup>e</sup> Church remoued to Windsor in Connecticut Colony, and Mr. Mather & his people came & Joined with Mr. Maverick and that half of y<sup>e</sup> Church that were left, and from these people so united are y<sup>e</sup> greatest part of y<sup>e</sup> present Inhabitants descended. When these two Companies of people were thus united they made one Church, having y<sup>e</sup> S<sup>d</sup> Revd. Mr. John Maverick, & y<sup>e</sup> S<sup>d</sup> Revd. Mr. Richard Mather for their Pastors."

---

## CHAPTER II.

### DIVISION OF MATTAPANNOCK.

It was not till the year 1637 that there was any formal division of Mattapannock, and it is probable that till that date all the settlers had a right to have their cattle pastured in South Boston. In this year, however, a number of the colonists obtained from the town the exclusive privilege of using the peninsula. Says Blake, "In some part of this Year the Town chose 20 Men to order y<sup>e</sup> affairs of y<sup>e</sup> Plantation; and very many orders were made for y<sup>e</sup> disposal of small pieces of Land & Marsh, &c., and a List of those who were to haue Land in y<sup>e</sup> Division of y<sup>e</sup> Neck & other Lands, consisting of about 104 Names."

It is supposed that no legal division was made; that is, the land was not divided into separate por-

tions, but each had a right in common to use it as a pasture. The following is a list of the names of those who had a right to use Mattapannock, now South Boston, taken from the Town Records:—

Thomas Andrews. Mr. Humphrey Atherton. Mr. James Bates. Mr. Bellingham. John Benham. Mrs. Briggs. William Blake. Edward Bullock. Mr. Nicholas Butler. Bernard Capen (this man died Nov. 8, 1638, aged 76 years). John Capen (a distinguished personage, who became a Freeman in 1634, was Captain of the Militia, Deacon and Representative, and died April 4, 1692, aged 80 years). Edward Clap (this man was Deacon of the Church 26 years). Nicholas Clap (also Deacon). Roger Clap (afterwards Captain of the Castle, and author of the interesting Memoirs of the first settlement of the Town). Austin Clement. Richard Collicot. Robert Deeble. Thos. Dickerman. Thomas Dimmock. Nathaniel Duncan. George Dyer. John Eelles. Joseph Farnsworth. Benjamin Fenn. Joseph Flood. Widow Foster. Christopher Gibson (this person was one of the founders of the Second Church in Boston, and bequeathed his property, after the payment of his debts and legacies, to be invested in some real estate, "for the promoting of Dorchester; it amounted to £104). Mr. John Gilbert. Mr. John Glover (another distinguished man, a Captain and a Representative, the first who set up tanning in Massachusetts, and died Jan. 1654). John Greenway (Good man). Thos. Hatch. Mr. William Hathorne (a Representative, Speaker of the House; Captain of the Militia, Major and Assistant). John Hayden. Richard Hawes (Good man). Mr. Hawkins. Mr. John Hill. John Holland. John Holman. John Hull. Jonas Humphreys. Mr. Hutch-

inson. Richard Jones. Thos. Jones. Mr. John Knight. Thomas Kinnersley. John Kinsley. Thos. Lambert. William Lane (Good man). Mr. Thomas Makepeace. Mr. Martin. Rev. Richard Mather. Alexander Miller. John Miller. Thomas Millet. Mr. George Minot (this man was Ruling Elder of the Church for 30 years). John Moore. Edward Munnings. Mr. Thomas Newbury. John Niles. Mr. James Parker (a clergyman). John Phillips. John Pierce. Robert Pierce. Andrew Pitcher. John Pope. William Preston. Daniel Price. George Proctor. Widow Purchase. William Read. Mr. Thomas Richards. Joseph Rigby. Thos. Samford. Matthew Sension. Widow Smed. John Smith. Mr. Stoughton. William Sumner. Thomas Swift. Nicholas Upsall. Richard Wade. Nathaniel Wales. George Way. George Weeks. John Whitcomb. Edward White. Mr. Whitfield. Mr. Whitman. Bray Wilkins. Thomas Wiswall. Mr. Withington. Henry Wright. Richard Wright.

It appears, then, that Mattapanock, now so valuable a part of Boston, was considered by the first settlers as not of sufficient value to be divided. It was a fine pasture for the herds of cattle which the colonists brought with them, and accordingly was used exclusively for that purpose. We can imagine the appearance of South Boston at that time. A peninsula, or rather an island at high water, covered with a rich growth of grass, marked the spot now occupied by hundreds of dwelling-houses. Where now are laid out wide streets, once grazed a large number of cattle. In some parts of the peninsula were found clumps of trees, which afforded shelter for the kine. By constructing a few rods of fence, the cattle were prevented from straying away. This

fence was built near the present junction of Dorchester Avenue and the causeway between South Boston and Dorchester. From thence ran a path-way to the Neck, commanded by a gate. Persons were appointed to collect and drive all the kine to the common pasture, and to go for them at night. We are informed by the chronicle that "The oxen and steers were in one fenced pasture by themselves, and the younglings in another."

Thus for many years was South Boston used only as a pasture for cattle. It may be a consolation, however, to reflect that among those who had a right to occupy Mattapanock, there were numbered some of the most illustrious of the colonists. Several Representatives, three or four Captains, two clergymen, quite a number of Good men and Mist'ers, sent their kine daily to South Boston to eat of the fat of the land; while among the names of the one hundred and four, we find several Widows who also shared in the peninsula which was "so fit a place for cattle." Even good Richard Mather shared in this privilege, and sent his Brindle to graze on the very ground perchance where now stands the edifice called by his name and devoted to the acquisition of useful knowledge.

In 1642 was launched the first ship built in Dorchester. Although we find no mention made as to the place where it was built, still there is but little doubt that it was constructed near the residences of the colonists, and therefore not far from South Boston. It was probably launched into the Old Harbor.

The following are some of the regulations made at various times by the Town in regard to the cattle to be pastured in Mattapanock.

"April 3, 1638. It is ordered that for this year

only the oxen, mares, goats and young cattle shall be kept at the Neck, and no man shall keep any cowes there on pain of ten shillings for every cow so kept there contrary to this order.

"Feb. 13, 1639. It is ordered that no swine shall be kept at the Great Neck, on pain of five shillings to be levied by distress.

"April 1, 1640. It is ordered that no man shall put any cattle on the Great Neck till the 15th of this month, on pain of 12d. for every beast that shall be found there before that day, to be levied by distress."

The last order was passed in order to prevent persons from turning their cattle out to pasture before the grass was of sufficient growth to supply them with food. The same order was passed in succeeding years.

Several years passed before any definite division was made. From the following order, passed the 7th of the 4th month, 1642, we are led to suppose that those who received land on the Neck in 1637, had commenced marking out their plots.

"Agreed that in laying out the Neck of land, they are to begin at the north side of the Neck, and lay that out first, namely of the north side of the way that is laid out. And when that is laid out, then to begin at the south side of the way and go forward; that if any land be left, it may lie at the farthest part towards the castle, and Bro. Jones, Mr. Glover, and Bro. Wilks are to give such allowance for swamps as they in their wisdom shall think meet."

When the division was made, a certain portion of the Neck was reserved by the town as a common pasture. Any person had the privilege of allowing his cattle to graze on this parcel, provided he paid a small tax imposed by the town.



In November, 1656, the proprietors of the Neck made a long statement of grievances which they suffered, and requested certain changes in the position of the fence about the town pasture. The matter was duly considered, and such changes were made as to satisfy the complainants. In 1657 the fence across the passage from the main land to Mattapan-nock had become broken in some places, and the causeway needed repairs. The following order was passed Dec. 4, at a regular Town Meeting:—

“Ordered, that the proprietors of the Neck be requested to repair the fence and causeway, and in default of so doing they be prosecuted under the law in regard to roads and fences.”

In 1667 the persons who owned land in Mattapan-nock were obliged to pay a tax of half a penny on each acre of plowed land only. The following is a list of those who were rated, 11th month, 3d day:—

“Capt. Clap, 7d.; Jos. Farnsworth, 1s.; Anniel Weeks, 2d.; Obadiah Swift, 2d.; Widow Smith, 3d.; Mr. Patten, 2d.; Richard Baker, 1s.; William Sumner, 7d.; John Blackman, 1d.; Nicholas Clap, 11d.; Augustin Clement, 4d.; Widow Clap, 9d.; Timothy Mather, 1s. 2d.; Capt. Foster, 1s. 6d.; Richard Withington, 1s. 1d.; William Clarke, 6d.; John Blake, 1d.; Samuel Clap, 4d.; Wid. Baker, 1s. 3d.; Obadiah Hawes, 1d.; Wid. Mannings, 3d.; Ezra Clap, 6d.; John Capen, Junr., 2d.; Deacon Wiswall, 8d.; George Dyer, 6d.; Dea. Capen, 3d.; Mr. Howard, 7d.; John Mosely, 2d.; Mrs. Stoughton, 2s.; Isaac Jones, 6d.; Widow Batten, 4d.; James White, 2d.; Mr. Jones, 10d.; Ebenezer Williams, 3d.; Enoch Wiswall, 6d.; Thomas Lake, 1d.; James Blake, 11d.; Nath'l Clap, 6d.

Total sum, 19s. 9d.

Charges laid out for Gate and Hinges, £1 2s.”

Previous to 1690, the value of the Neck Lands is not known. It is probable that the transfers of titles, in most instances, were merely an exchange for the greater convenience of all parties. The following table, however, shows the value of land at different times:—

In 1690, a lot of choice upland sold for £4 an acre.

1694, a lot of 12 acres in the vicinity of the present Lyceum building sold for £40 New England currency—about \$3,33 per acre.

1720, choice upland, \$7 per acre.

1740, choice meadow, \$2,75 per acre.

1750, upland below M street, about \$3 per acre.

1760, upland below M street, about \$3 per acre.

From this time till after the Revolution, the price varied but little.

In ancient deeds we find apparently a great difference in the price of land at different times, when in fact there was but little. This is caused by the variation in the value of paper money. The subjoined table shows the number of shillings necessary to make a dollar in silver at different periods:—

From 1630 to 1652, 26s. 8d. was the value of one ounce of silver, or about \$1.

From 1652 to 1700, 20s. to an ounce of silver.

In 1710, 8s. to an ounce of silver.

1720, 12s.      “      “      “

1730, 20s.      “      “      “

1740, 28s.      “      “      “

1750, 60s.      “      “      “

Most of the land in South Boston changed hands before 1700, as by the death of the first proprietors a division was made among the heirs. In 1718, those who held land in Mattapanock held a meeting, and decided to fence their several lots. The

following is a copy of the record of this meeting. We transcribe it from the original document in the hand-writing of Adam Winthrop, the Secretary.

“Dorchester, Nov. 26, 1718.

“At a Meeting of the Proprietors of Dorchester Neck, warned by Mr. Preserved Capen, to consider of the Future Management and Improvement of S<sup>d</sup> Neck.

“*Present*—Lieut. Foster, 70 acres; Capt. Wiswall, 60; Elder Topliffe, 2; Deacon James Blake, 80; Sam'l Capen, 1 1-2; Sam'l Clap, 14; Jona. Clap and mother, 25; Eben'r Clap, 11; Benja. Bird, 30; John Eliot, 23; Sam'l Capen, Junr., 4; Richard Withington and mother, 30; Humphrey Atherton, 17; Preserved Capen, 16 1-2; Abiel Bird, 3; Thomas Bird, 5 1-2; Ephraim Pearson, 3; John Blackman, 3; Obadiah Swift, 3; John Glover, 2; Jerijah Wales, 1 1-2; William Clap, 2; Hopestill Capen, 2 1-4; Adam Winthrop, 35; Winthrop for Col. Tailer, 19; Ebenezer Holmes, 7; Jona. Clap for Widow Blake, 12; Jos. Weeks for his mother, 4. Total, 486 1-4 acres.

“Desired by the Proprietors that Adam Winthrop should enter the votes.

“Voted, That we allow persons absent to be represented by those that are present upon their Desire.

“Voted, that each Proprietor's Vote shall be according to the Number of Acres he possesses.

“That Lieut. Foster and Deacon Blake be desired at or before the Town's Meeting, which is to be Next Monday, the first of December, to notify the Selectmen of Dorchester that the Causeway over to Dorchester Neck is defective and out of Repair, and that it is the Desire of the Proprietors that the Town

would direct it to be mended speedily, or as soon as may be.

"That in case the Town shall not order the mending of S<sup>d</sup> Causeway at or before the Town's Meeting in March next, that then Capt. Oliver Wiswall and Mr. Benja. Bird do present the Said Way to the Quarter Session for the County of Suffolk in Aprill next.

"Voted, that the Said Neck, from and after the Term of Six Months from this Time, w<sup>ch</sup> will be the 26th Day of May next, be no longer held or deemed as a Common or Generall Field. But that the Proprietors of Lands there be obliged to make, maintain and keep up Fences there, as in other places in the Province, any Useage or Custom to the Contrary notwithstanding.

"At the desire of Deacon Blake that he may set up a Gate across the Way by his Orchard, to prevent a great charge of Fencing which it will otherwise take to keep Cattle from the Water and the Meadow, consented to, provided he keep up a Good Gate convenient for Horses and Carts.

"That we are still willing the Gate at the Mouth of the Neck shall still stand, Provided it do not interfere with the Votes abovementioned.

"That Copies of these Votes be lodged, as soon as they are drawn fair, in the hands of Lieut. Foster, Capt. Wiswall and Deacon Blake, and secured there hereafter, that any proprietor may have a Coppy by paying for it.

"At the Desire of the Proprietors that I would attest the above Votes as passed at the S<sup>d</sup> Meeting, I do accordingly attest the same.

ADAM WINTHROP."

At the House of  
Mr. Sam'l Clap,  
Nov. 26, 1718."

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

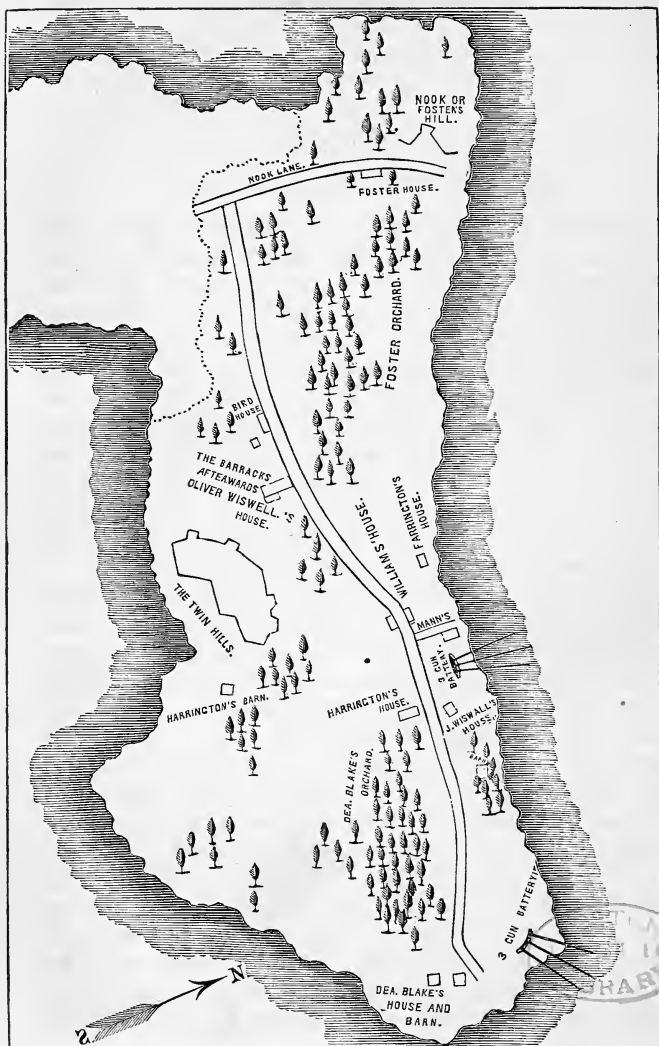
THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE

THE JOURNAL OF THE



PLAN OF DORCHESTER NECK—Drawn for the use of the British Army in 1775.

## CHAPTER III.

## FIRST SETTLERS OF MATTAPANNOCK.

It is not known when the first dwelling-house was built in South Boston. No record is made of it in the Town Books, and the Assessors' Lists anterior to 1770 have all been destroyed by fire. It is probable, however, that the first house erected in Mattapannock was built about the year 1660, by Dea. James Blake, an ancestor of the Blake Family now resident among us. The site of this building was on the spot where now stands the residence of Samuel Blake, Esq., at the Point. In a will made in 1693, we find mention of this house, and in the year 1732 it was so impaired by age that it was taken down, and a new one erected on the same spot.

Gradually the number of persons residing in South Boston increased; and in 1776 there were nine dwelling-houses and twelve families in Mattapannock. From a map of Boston and its vicinity, drawn by order of the British General, in 1775, we have a projection of South Boston, with every house and every tree on the peninsula. An aged member of the Blake Family, who was born in 1776, has given us such information that we are now able to state the names of the occupants of all the houses.

First, on Nook's Lane, afterwards called "The Way," was the house of Mrs. Foster, situated on the parcel of land where now stand two large trees, at the corner of Fourth and E streets, and opposite the Bigelow School-house. This was for many years the residence of Ebenezer Jones, and in 1750 it

passed into the hands of the Fosters. At the time of the Revolution, this dwelling was one of the most elegant in the vicinity of Boston, and it is related that in 1776 several Continental soldiers who strolled over to the Neck were with difficulty restrained from destroying the house, thinking it belonged to a Tory, as several of the rooms were papered, a luxury almost unknown in those days. To the soldiers this was considered a sure sign that the occupant was a Tory or traitor.

The next house, owned by Mr. Bird, was situated on a lane leading from what is now the head of Fourth street.

A short distance farther east, near the present location of G street, was a lane on which was built a barrack but one story high. This barrack was afterwards altered into a dwelling-house by building a second story, and was occupied by Oliver Wiswall.

Near the present site of the Hawes Place Church once stood several houses designated as the "Village." One of these was occupied by Mr. Deluce, one by Mr. Marshall, and another by Mr. Harrington. One of them still exists. Deluce's will be remembered as a low building, for years unoccupied, situated next to the Omnibus Office, and lately torn down. Williams's house has been kept in good repair, and is now inhabited. It stands a little back from the Old Road. Behind Williams's house, and near the sea-shore, stood another dwelling, occupied by Mr. Ferrington; and a little to the east of this, on a lane leading from the Old Road, stood Mann's house. A short distance farther east, and near the present location of the Hawes Burying Ground, stood the house of Mr. Harrington, whose descendants are still among us. At some distance south-



east of the house stood his barn. Nearly opposite, and where now stands the stockade fence, was John Wiswall's dwelling, and in his orchard, situated east of his house, was his barn. Then at the extreme Point was the house and barn of Deacon Blake, of whom we have spoken before. Connected with this house was a large orchard, consisting of one hundred trees of different kinds. Near Mr. Harrington's barn it is said there were several locust trees, bearing a fruit very pleasant to the taste.

The cellar of the first Foster house, built under the two elm trees at the corner of E and Fourth streets, is still to be seen. These two trees are more than two hundred years old, and during the last few years many branches have become lifeless and have blown off.\* The Foster house, as we remarked, was nearest to Boston, and was the only house west of Dorchester street. The remainder of the land was a pasture. There were quite a number of trees situated between Dorchester and D streets. There was also by far the best orchard in the vicinity connected with this house. Peach, apple and plum trees were found in considerable numbers.

In 1681. died Mr. John Foster, one of the family who resided in South Boston. We find the following in the "Annals," under date of this year. "Died Mr. John Foster, Son of Capt. Hopestill Foster; School-master of Dorchester, and he that made the then Seal or Arms of y<sup>e</sup> Colony, namely, an Indian with a Bow & Arrow, &c. Upon his Tomb or Grave Stone is written as follows:—

---

\* These trees, since the above was written, have been cut down to make room for buildings.

'The  
 'Ingenious  
 'Mathematician & Printer  
 'MR. JOHN FOSTER,  
 'Aged Thirty three years: Died Sept. 9,  
 '1681.  
 'Apr. 1682.' "

Mr. Foster was a graduate of Harvard College, and was a man of considerable note. His funeral was attended by a large number of mourning friends, and in accordance with the custom of the times, the afflicted family received Elegies on the death of their brother. There are now living in South Boston persons directly descended from the Fosters who first lived on Dorchester Neck. From them we have received two of the Elegies written on the death of Mr. John Foster. As they are rather curious documents, we have transcribed them from the original copies.

### "FUNERAL ELEGY,

Dedicated to the Memory of His  
 Worthy Friend, The Learned and Religious  
 MR. JOHN FOSTER, who Deceased in Dorchester the  
 9 of Septr. 1661.

Amongst the Mourners that are met  
 (For Payment of their last love debt  
 Unto the dead) to Solemnize,  
 With Sighs and Tears his Obsequies,

Love's Laws command that I appear  
 And drop a kindly friendly Tear.  
 I'll venture to bewail his Herse  
 Though in a homely Country verse.  
 To omit the same, it were  
 A Crime at least Piacular.

Our woful loss for to Set forth  
By setting forth the matchless worth  
Of the Deceased is too high  
For my poor Rural Poetry,  
And greater Skill it doth require  
Than whereunto I may aspire.

Records declare how he excelled  
In Parentage unparallell'd,  
Whose Grace and Virtues very great  
He did himself Improprate  
Unto Himself; improved withall  
By Learning Academical.

His Curious works had you but seen  
You would have thought Him to have been  
By Some Strange Metempsychosis  
A new reviv'd Archimedes;  
At least you would have judg'd that he  
A rare Apolles would soon be.

Adde to these things I have been hinting,  
His skill in that rare ART of PRINTING;  
His accurate Geography,  
And Astronomick Poetry;  
And you would say 'twere pittie He  
Should dy without an Elegie.

His piercing Astronomick Eye  
Could penetrate the Cloudy Sky,  
And Soar aloft, ith' highest sphere  
Descrying Stars that disappear  
To common eyes; But Faith and Hope  
His all excelling Telescope,  
Did help his heaven-born Soul to pry  
Beyond the Starry Canopy.

His excellencies here, we find  
Were crowned with a humble mind;  
Thus (Grace obtain'd and Art acquir'd  
And thirty-three years near expir'd)

He that here liv'd, belov'd, contented,  
Now dies bewail'd and much lamented.

Who knows the Skill, which to our losse  
This grave doth now alone ingrosse ;  
Ah who can tell JOHN FOSTER'S worth  
Whose Anagram is, I SHONE FORTH.  
Presage was his Apoge,  
By a preceding Prodigie.

Heaven's blazing Sword was brandished  
By Heaven's enraged wrath we dread ;  
Which Struck us with amazing fear  
Some fixed Star would disappear ;  
Th' appearance was not long adjourn'd  
Before our Fear to Sorrow turn'd.

Oh Fatal Star (whose fearful flame  
A fiery chariot became,  
Whereby our Phoenix did ascend),  
Thou art our Foe, although his Friend.

That rare Society, which forth  
Hath Sent Such Gems of greatest worth,  
Its Oaks and pleasant Plants by death  
Being pluckt up, it languisheth ;  
Thus dye our hopes, and Harvard's glory  
Scarce parallel'd in any Story.

That GOD does thus our choice ones Slay  
And cunning Artist take away,  
The Sacred Oracles do show  
A dreadfull flood of wrath in view.

Oh then let every one of you  
His rare accomplishments that knew,  
Now weep ; weep ye of Harvard Hall  
With bitterest Tears ; so weep we all.

Chiefly such as were alone  
Flesh of his flesh, bone of his bone,

Lament indeed, and fill the skys  
 With th' echo's of their dolefull cryes ;  
 Let JAMES and let ELISHA too  
 With COMFORT,\* STANDFAST weeping go,  
 THANKFULL, PATIENCE, MARY likewise  
 Like loveing Sisters solemnize  
 With Sighs your greatest loss, but yet  
 Your *Thankfull*, *Hope* do not forget  
 With *Perseverance* to fulfill.  
 Know your ELIJAH's GOD lives still.  
*Standfast* therefore with *Patience*,  
*Comfort* shall be your recompence.

And as you yet survive your Brother,  
 So be like comforts to your mother,  
 Who like Naomi sad is left  
 Of Husband and two Sons bereft ;  
 So bitterly th' Almighty one  
 Hath to our weeping Marah done.

Grieve not too much, the time draws near  
 You'll re-enjoy Relations dear,  
 And all together will on high  
 With everlasting Melody  
 And perfect peace His praises sing,  
 Who through all troubles did you bring.

THOMAS TILESTON."

We know little of the history of the author of this piece of poetry. He was without doubt a rare genius. It is mentioned that in 1676 he planted "y<sup>e</sup> Elm Trees now about y<sup>e</sup> Meeting House," in Dorchester.

The following is a copy of another, of a still more curious character.

---

\* It is said that Comfort was a rather mischievous chap, and when his mother read this line, she remarked that she wished he would be a little more of a comfort to her.

## "FUNERAL ELEGY,

Upon the much to be Lamented Death and most Deplorable Expiration of the Pious,  
Learned, Ingenious, and Eminently Usefull Servant of God,

MR. JOHN FOSTER,

Who Expired and Breathed out his Soul quietly into the Arms of His Blessed RE  
DEEMER, at Dorchester, Sept. 9th, Anno Dom: 1681. Ætatis Anno 33.

HERE lye the relict Fragments, which were took  
Out of Consumtion's teeth, by Death the Cook.  
Voracious Apetite dost thus devour  
Scarce ought hast left for worms t' live on an Hour  
But Skins & Bones, (no bones thou maks't of that,  
It is thy common trade t' eat all the fat.)  
Here lyes that earthly House, where once did dwell  
That Soul that Scarce hath left its Parallel  
For Sollid Judgment, Piety and Parts  
And peerless Skill in all the practick Arts,  
Which as the glittering Spheres it passed by,  
Methinks I saw it glance at Mercury;  
Ascended now; 'bove Tide and Time abides,  
Which sometimes told the world of Time and Tides.  
Next to the Third Heavens the Stars were his delight,  
Where his Contemplation dwelt both day and night,  
Soaring unceertainly but now at Shoar,  
Whether Sol moves or stands He doubts no more.  
He that despis'd the things the world admired,  
As having Skill in rarer things acquired,  
The heav'ns Interpreter doth disappear;  
The Starre's translated to his proper sphere.  
What e'er the world may think did cause his Death,  
Consumption, 'twas not Cupid, stopt his breath.  
The Heavens which God's glory doe discover,  
Have lost their constant Friend and instant Lover;  
Like Atlas, he help't bear up that rare Art  
Astronomy, & always took her part:  
Most happy Soul who didst not there Sit down,  
But didst make after an eternal Crown,  
Sage Archimede! Second Begalleell!  
Oh how didst thou in Curious works excell!

Thine Art and Skill deserve to see the Press,  
 And be Composed in a Printer's dress.  
 Thy Name is worthy for to be enroll'd  
 In Printed Letters of the Choicest Gold.

Thy Death to five foretold Eclipses sad,  
 A great one, unforecast, doth superad,  
 Successive to that strange Æthereal Blaze,  
 Whereon thou didst so oft astonish'd gaze:  
 Which daily gives the world such fatal blows;  
 Still what's to come we dread; God only knows.  
 Thy body which no activeness did lack,  
 Now's laid aside like an old Almanack;  
 But for the present only's out of date—  
 'Twill have at length a far more active State.

Yea, though with dust thy body soiled be,  
 Yet at the Resurrection we shall see  
 A fair Edition and of matchless worth,  
 Free from Errata, new in Heaven set forth:  
 'Tis but a word from God the great Creatour,  
 It shall be Done when He saith *Imprimatur*.

Semoestus cecinit.

JÖSEPH CAPEN."

It is probable that this Elegy was not received for some months after Mr. Foster's death, as we find appended to it the following note:—

"Mrs. Foster,—I am very Happy to have it in my power to Send you this Coppy. I have long intended it, but want of leisure is the cause. That this may meet you and Children in Health is the wish of  
 A. SHORES."

The father of Mr. James Foster, Capt. Hopestill Foster, died October 15th, 1676. He was of great worth, and was extensively engaged in public affairs. On the 5th of January, 1702–3, Mrs. Foster, consort of Capt. Hopestill Foster, and the lady to whom the

two Elegies were presented, died at Dorchester, aged 83 years. From this couple there has descended a large number of families, and one branch has resided in Mattapanock ever since the old Foster house was built.

About the year 1700 there stood on the Mann estate, a wooden building occupied by Mr. James Foster and his family, consisting of his wife and a negro girl. One Sabbath Mr. Foster repaired to Dorchester to attend meeting, and while he was absent, the dwelling by some means took fire. As there were few inhabitants in South Boston at that time, and as nearly all the males had gone to meeting, no efforts were made to save the house, and it was burnt down, together with all its contents. Mrs. Foster, anxious to save her husband's private papers, entered the house and succeeded in bringing out his desk, but unfortunately, in her haste, she let the treasure fall from her hands, and the papers were scattered by the wind. Mr. Foster, on his return at night, in place of his comfortable dwelling, found nothing but a heap of ruins.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### FIRST SETTLERS OF MATTAPANOCK.

MR. JAMES BLAKE, who built the first house in Mattapanock, was born in England, in 1623. He was the son of William and Agnes, who were among the first settlers of Dorchester; and, as we have before remarked, he built a dwelling-house in South Boston about the year 1660. However, as old age crept



upon him, his eldest son James took possession of the homestead, and the old gentleman lived with him. On the 28th of June, 1700, he died, aged 77 years. In the "Annals" we find the following record made of this event:—

"1700. This year, June 28th, Died Elder James Blake, aged 77 years. He was first a Deacon of y<sup>e</sup> Church in Dorchester about 11 years, & then a Ruling Elder of y<sup>e</sup> same Church about 14 years, unto his death." In his will he left to his son James, "the house and land whereon he now lives." This son married, on the 8th of July, 1684, Miss Ruth Batchelder as his second wife, and they had several children, the eldest son of whom was called James. In 1732 he died, after a long and painful sickness. Says the Annals:—

"Oct. 22d, Died Deacon James Blake, in y<sup>e</sup> 81st year of his age, he having Languished about 7 years with an ulcerous Leg very painfull; but at last died of an Epedemical Cold that then carried off many aged People. He was a Deacon in this Church about 23 years, and once Chosen Elder but refused it. Upon his Graue Stone is thus written:

‘Here lyes Buried y<sup>e</sup> Body of

MR. JAMES BLAKE,

Who departed this Life Oct. 22d, 1732,

aged 80 years & 2 months.

‘He was a member in full Communion with y<sup>e</sup> Church of Christ in Dorchester about 55 years, and a Deacon of y<sup>e</sup> Same Church about 35 years.

‘Seven years Strong Pain doth end at last,

His weary Days and Nights are past;

The way is Rough, ye End is Peace;

Short Pain gives place to endless Ease.”

At his death his son James purchased the rights of the other children to the old homestead, and became sole possessor of it. This man, born in Matapannock, April 30, 1688, O. S., was one of the most distinguished personages in Dorchester. He was for many years Town Clerk and Town Treasurer, and for several years the principal Selectman. All these offices he continued to fill till he was rendered incapable of active duty by sickness and infirmity. He was first elected Selectman and Town Treasurer in 1724, and in 1725 he was also chosen Town Clerk. In 1749 he was prevented from attending the Town Meeting by sickness, and the citizens chose another person to the offices he had so long held. The following extract from the Annals shows what he thought of this deprivation of office:—

“By Reason of my sickness I was forced to be absent from this last Anniversary Town-Meeting, which I had not been before (as I suppose) for y<sup>e</sup> space of 30 years or more. And the Town left me out of all Publick business, after I had served them (I hope I may say faithfully according to my ability), as a Town Treasurer, Selectman and Assessor, for y<sup>e</sup> space of 25 Years successively, and as Town Clerk for y<sup>e</sup> space of 24 Years successively; I having in that time wrote in the second Book of y<sup>e</sup> Town Records 208 pages which finished the Book; and have begun the Third Book of Records, & wrote therein 119 pages; besides making Tables for both y<sup>e</sup> two first Books of Records, in an Intire Book by itself. I have also in the Treasurer’s business made, begun and wrote out two large folio Books of Accompts, containing about 224 folios or 448 Pages each; and the major part of the Third Folio Book of about y<sup>e</sup> same bigness. Besides large Bundles of

Tax Lists, Tables to make Rates by, Warrants for Town Meetings, Divisions of y<sup>e</sup> Highways, Plans of Land sold by y<sup>e</sup> Town, &c. All which is more (I suppose) by many times over than any one man before me has wrote & done for the Town. When I first came into y<sup>e</sup> business I found many things in poor order; but I set myself Industriously (according to my ability), to Reform and Methodize things in y<sup>e</sup> best order I could. And though the Business was not Profitable, I spending a great deal of time & doing a great many things I was never paid for, especially in former years; yet, since I spent the prime of my time in y<sup>e</sup> Town's service, when I might have Employed it more Profitably otherwise, and now am advanced in years, & so infirm and weakly as not to be able to do any other Business, to leave me out (not for any suggestion of male-administration, but) only to help a young man to some Business, I cannot but look upon as ungratefull in y<sup>e</sup> Town; and yet I would not Impute it to y<sup>e</sup> whole Town, the matter being carried chiefly (as I suppose) by a discontented Faction party."

The young man to whom reference is here made, was Mr. Noah Clap, who held the offices of Town Treasurer and Town Clerk for many years.

Mr. Blake was an excellent mathematician, and the most noted surveyor of his time. His plans were so accurate as to elicit universal praise, and during his life he surveyed several whole towns. He once made plans of every acre of land in Dorchester, and that when its territorial limits were much larger than at the present time. Many plans drawn by him are still in existence, and show by their elegant construction the hand of a master workman. The large book of plans of the whole of Dorchester, however,

cannot be found. When last seen, it was produced in one of the Courts in Boston to prove certain claims, and so great was the reliance placed on it, that the case was decided without any further evidence. These plans would prove of inestimable value, could they be found, in settling land claims, and any reasonable price would be paid for them by the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society. It is feared that they are destroyed, although they may at some future time be brought to light. Among the plans which have escaped the destroying hand of time, there are several projects of different parts of South Boston. There is not in existence, however, to our knowledge, a complete map of Mattapanock made previous to 1776.

But by far the most useful work of Mr. Blake, was the compiling of his celebrated "Annals of Dorchester." This work gives a minute history of the town for a period of one hundred and twenty years previous to his death. It contains lists of the Town Officers for nearly every year; and many very interesting historical reminiscences, nowhere else to be found, are here preserved. The Annals were probably written in South Boston, as the author resided in the Blake House at the Point during most of his life. To a Mattapanock man, and to a Mattapanock book, then, are we indebted for a work which was for many years the only authentic authority for the early accounts of the town of Dorchester, and even now it is considered by far the best history of the Town extant. It has been published in a neat form by the Dorchester Antiquarian and Historical Society, and is possessed by many of our citizens.

Mr. James Blake died in the year 1750, in the 63d year of his age. The following is the record

made of it by his son, and is appended to the "Annals:"—

"This Year Died Mr. James Blake, who wrote this Book thus far, on y<sup>e</sup> 4th Day of December, between 8 & 9 of y<sup>e</sup> clock in y<sup>e</sup> Evening, in y<sup>e</sup> 63d year of his age: he had been in a very poor state of Health ever since his Relapse mentioned in y<sup>e</sup> year 1749. He was a very useful & serviceable man & often Employed in y<sup>e</sup> Town & Proprietors' Business, & did a great deal for them, as may be seen by what he wrote himself in y<sup>e</sup> aforesaid year, 1749. He was much esteemed by men of Learning for his Learning & Piety."

In 1752 his mother, Mrs. Ruth Blake, died, in the 90th year of her age. She suffered from no disease, but died of old age.

In 1701, Blake says that "This year, July 26th, Abby Christian was drowned & Cast ashore upon the Dorchester Neck of Land." Of the circumstances of the death of this person we know nothing. It is probable she was drowned in Old Harbor, and washed upon the beach in Mattapanock by the waves.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### DORCHESTER HEIGHTS.—REVOLUTIONARY EVENTS.

In 1776 Mattapanock was made to perform a most important part in the successful termination of the struggles of the American Colonists in their efforts for freedom. The British had for months occupied Boston; and although besieged by the American army, they had become quite contented, open

communication with England and other places, by water, supplying them every needed demand.

On the 22d of December, 1775, Congress, after a long and serious debate, passed a resolution authorizing Gen. Washington to attack the troops in the town of Boston, notwithstanding the town and property in it might be destroyed. Feeling, however, that with his present army he could not succeed in dislodging the British, the Commander-in-Chief called for more troops and also for ammunition. These in February were granted, and Washington felt like immediately adopting decisive measures. As near as could be ascertained, the British army consisted of only about five thousand men, while that of the Americans was composed of more than seventeen thousand. About this time supplies arrived for the loyal army, and Gen. Howe soon thought himself secure in his strong-hold. He determined on evacuating Boston, but intended to wait till he could make arrangements for a long voyage. The Americans, however, did not consult his wishes, and prepared to make an immediate attack on the town, being determined to oblige the British to leave, cost what it might.

Dorchester Heights had long been considered as the most convenient point from which to dislodge the British. Situated near Boston, it had complete command of the town, and also of the whole harbor. Nature had apparently formed the hill in a manner to second the ends of the sons of Liberty, and it only remained for them to take possession. Accordingly, as soon as Washington could strengthen his army sufficiently to warrant the undertaking, he made active preparations for erecting redoubts on Dorchester Heights.

In a letter dated Cambridge, 26th Feb., 1776, and directed to the Council of Massachusetts Bay, General Washington wrote:

“I am making all possible preparation to take possession of the Heights of Dorchester, which I expect I shall be able to accomplish by the latter end of this week, and it is believed that this, if any thing can, will bring the enemy out of Boston.”

In another letter, directed to John Reed, and bearing date, Cambridge, March 3, 1776, we find the following:—

“I hope in a few nights to be in readiness to take post on Dorchester Point, as we are using every means in our power to provide materials for this purpose; the ground being so hard frozen yet, that we cannot intrench, and therefore are obliged to depend entirely upon chandeliers, fascines, and screwed hay for our redoubts. It is expected that this work will bring on an action between the king's troops and ours.”

It was felt to be a critical period, and every precaution was taken to strengthen the lines, and prepare for any repulse which the British might attempt to make. The following extract from the general orders, February 26, 1776, shows the care taken to prevent crime and cowardice:—

“All officers, non-commissioned officers, and soldiers, are positively forbid playing at cards, and other games of chance. At this time of public distress, men may find enough to do in the service of their God and their country, without abandoning themselves to vice and immorality.”

“As the time is now fast approaching when every man must expect to be drawn into the field of action, it is highly important that he should prepare his mind,

as well as every thing necessary for it. It is a noble cause we are engaged in; it is the cause of virtue and mankind. Every temporal advantage and comfort to us and our posterity depends upon the vigor of our exertions; in short, freedom or slavery must be the result of our conduct. There can, therefore, be no greater inducement to behave well. But it may not be amiss for the troops to know, that if any man in action shall presume to skulk, hide himself, or retreat from the enemy without the orders of his commanding officer, he will be instantly shot down as an example of cowardice; cowards having too frequently disconcerted the best formed troops by their dastardly behavior."

General Washington applied at two foundries for mortars, and succeeded in contracting for quite a number of thirteen-inch ones to be delivered immediately. As the ground was frozen very hard, it was necessary to procure substitutes for dirt, and, accordingly, chandeliers, fascines and screwed hay in vast quantities were collected in the American camp. The fascines were an immense collection of white birch faggots, procured from the farm of Capt. John Homans, in the upper part of Dorchester. Washington rode over this farm, and selected it as the most proper place for the labor on account of its obscurity. A lieutenant and thirty soldiers were delegated to cut the brush. Two thousand bandages were prepared to dress broken limbs, and forty-five bateaux, each capable of carrying eighty men, and two floating batteries, were collected in Charles River. The whole design, however, was kept a profound secret, and for three nights the Americans cannonaded Boston from Cobble Hill, Lechmere Point, and Lamb's Dam.



Washington was certain that the taking possession of Dorchester Heights would bring on a battle, and he intended to attack Boston at the same time on the Cambridge side. He wrote to Congress on the 26th of Feb., and requested them to direct the towns in the vicinity to order the militia "to repair to the lines with their arms, ammunition, and accoutrements, instantly upon a signal being given." Accordingly, large numbers of troops came pouring into the camp, and every thing gave token of an approaching conflict. Four thousand chosen men were selected to attack Boston as soon as the attention of the British should be attracted to Dorchester Heights.

On Monday night, March 4th, a severe cannonading on Boston was commenced by the Americans, and in return the British fired shot and shells into the camp at Cambridge. At about seven o'clock, two thousand men, under the command of General Thomas, marched across the causeway to Dorchester Heights. A covering party of eight hundred led the way; then followed the carts with the necessary intrenching tools; then twelve hundred soldiers, under the immediate command of Gen. Thomas, and in the rear followed three hundred carts loaded with fascines and hay. The greatest silence was observed, no one being permitted to speak above a whisper; and at eight o'clock the party arrived on the Heights and began operations. The covering party was divided, so that a portion were stationed at the point nearest Boston, and the remainder at the point nearest the Castle. As soon as the order was given to commence, the three hundred cartmen, under the special command of Mr. Goddard, of Brookline, began to transport the fascines to the hill, and in a very few hours the necessary quantity was on the ground.

Bundles of hay were arranged so as to protect the teams, and some of the drivers made three or more trips during the night. One of the teamsters, Mr. William Sumner, made five trips before daylight. This gentleman, who died a few years since, said that he saw and recognized Gen. Washington riding towards the forts, accompanied by a few of his officers.

The veteran Gridley, the engineer of Bunker Hill, was engineer on Dorchester Heights at this time.

The occasion was one of intense interest and excitement. All the laborers exerted themselves to their utmost, and, as by magic, the fascines were set up with stakes like basket-work, and the interstices were filled with whatever was procurable. The moon shone brightly, and lent her light to aid in the completion of a work which was to prove of the greatest advantage to Boston, and help secure the salvation of America. The silence of the night was disturbed by the continual roaring of cannon, and the bursting of the British shells, which often exploded high in the air, and threw their fiery fragments in every direction.

At about four o'clock, a party was sent to the hill to relieve those who had labored all night, and before daylight two forts of sufficient strength to be a good defence against grape shot and small arms were finished. As the sun rose above the horizon, it revealed to the British two fortifications which had no existence the evening before. The haze of morn only served to render the redoubt still more formidable, and with astonishment they gazed on the work which had so completely brought them into the power of their enemies. Gen. Howe, when he saw the forts, exclaimed, "I know not what I shall do.

The rebels have done more in one night than my whole army would have done in a month." "It must have been the employment of at least twelve thousand men," he wrote to Lord Dartmouth. It was immediately decided by the Admiral of the British fleet, that unless the Americans were dislodged, the vessels stationed in the harbor could not ride in safety; and it was also very evident that the troops in Boston were now in a precarious situation. There were but two alternatives. Either the town must be evacuated, or the Americans driven from the Heights.

General Howe could not for a moment think of thus quietly yielding the possession of the town whose inhabitants had been the original cause of the war. Relying on the superior strength and discipline of his army, he immediately decided to attack the intrenchments, however great the hazard.

He ordered twenty-four hundred men, under the command of Earl Percy, to repair to Castle William, and at night to assail the new works. These preparations were seen by the Americans, and with feverish excitement they prepared for the contest. Gen. Washington felt it to be a moment of the greatest importance to the cause of liberty, and his soldiers, worked to the highest pitch of enthusiasm, were eager for the battle. Thousands assembled upon the neighboring hills, expecting to see repeated the scenes of Bunker Hill. The American works were now very strong, and in order to render the passage up the hill, should it be attempted, still more difficult, a large number of barrels filled with stones and sand were placed on the brow of the hill. These were to be rolled down the embankment as the columns were advancing. It is said that one of these barrels

was sent down the hill in order to see how far it would roll, and in its course it cut off a large elm tree at the root, and made an indenture a foot deep in another tree which was in its path.

Washington, as he walked among his soldiers, animated them by saying, "Remember it is the 5th of March, and avenge the death of your brethren." Both the Americans and British were eager for the contest, and to all human foresight the fields of Matapannock were to be drenched with the blood of the combatants. At 12 o'clock the loyal troops began to embark for the Castle, but soon a violent wind arose, and prevented the soldiers from reaching their place of destination. During the night the storm continued, and the rain poured in torrents. So great was the surf that an attempt to land must have proved fatal. The next day the wind was very boisterous, and the rain still continued.

In the mean time the Americans were actively at work strengthening their redoubt. At length General Howe gave up his project to attack the new works, and recalled his troops to Boston. He felt that the fortifications were now too strong to give any probable hope for a successful assault; and although he was well aware of the dishonor which it would bring upon the British arms, still he concluded to evacuate the town rather than to have his army cut to pieces by the Americans.

On the 7th of March, Gen. Howe called a council of his officers, and it was then determined that it was advisable to leave Boston. As may be supposed, the army were surprised when they heard of this decision. To the Tories the news was astounding. They had been repeatedly informed that reinforcements sufficient to protect the town would be furnish-

ed by Parliament; and therefore, when they were told that the British army was to retire from Boston, they knew not which way to turn for protection. Many decided to undergo a long voyage rather than to commit themselves to the wrath of the Whigs, and Gen. Howe provided vessels for their accommodation. Others ventured to remain.

Immediately the army in Boston began to make preparations to evacuate. The Tories, eager to save their personal property, used every exertion to have their goods, rather than the king's stores, placed in the vessels. The soldiers also fell to plundering the houses, and stripped them of every valuable article. Gen. Howe issued orders against these outrages, and threatened with death any who should be found engaged in them; but yet they were continued, and nearly every house and shop was entered and robbed of its most valuable contents. Gen. Howe caused all the public stores which could not be taken, to be destroyed. Several sloops were sunk, and many of the cannon spiked, or thrown into the sea. The greatest anxiety was now felt for the safety of the town. A few weeks before, the Americans had determined to destroy Boston if it should be necessary in order to dislodge the British. But now the danger was from another source. General Howe threatened, that if his troops were assaulted while leaving the harbor, he would fire the city. With the design of averting if possible such a calamity, certain indirect communications were attempted. Washington was anxious to save blood-shed so far as it was in accordance with the best welfare of the cause of freedom, and Howe was equally desirous of preventing an engagement; and although there was no express negotiation, yet there was a tacit understand-

ing that the British were to leave the harbor unmolested.

On the ninth of March, Washington planted a battery on Leak, and Bird's Hill, and another at the Point, with the design of annoying the fleet if found necessary.

Nook's Hill, also, from its proximity to the city, was an important position, and Washington decided to fortify it, with a view of bringing the British completely under his power. Accordingly, on the same night, a detachment was sent to erect a battery upon it. The night was very severely cold and blustering, and the soldiers, by some strange thoughtlessness, built a fire. The British had greatly feared the occupancy of Nook's Hill, and guided by the light, they commenced a severe cannonading upon the fortifying party, from the Green Store Battery, near the present corner of Washington and Dover streets. Four soldiers and a regimental surgeon named Dole were killed, and the troops were obliged to suspend operations and retreat. These were the only persons who lost their lives during all the military operations at Mattapanneck.

The cannonade was a signal for a general discharge of cannon and mortars from the American batteries, and all night there was a continuous roar of artillery, no less than eight hundred shot being fired. The scene was one of terrific grandeur. The whole sky was lighted up as the cannon belched forth their fiery columns of sulphurous flame.

The people of Boston, to whom had been communicated the design of Howe to evacuate, were terror-stricken at the prospect that the town would be destroyed. Mrs. Adams in her Letters refers to this night's cannonading in the following manner:—

"Sunday evening, March 10.—A most terrible and incessant cannonade from half after eight until six this morning. I hear we have lost four men killed and some wounded, in attempting to take the hill nearest the town, called Nook's Hill. We did some work, but fire from the ships beat off our men, so that they did not secure it, but retired to the fort upon the other hill."

The next week was one of great anxiety to both parties. In Boston, preparations were being made to evacuate, not only by the soldiers, but by Tory citizens. In the American camp there was much disquietude. The designs of Howe could not be ascertained, and his moderation in preparing to vacate the town made the besiegers very impatient. With the enemy wholly in their control, they desired, if possible, to save Boston from destruction. Washington feared the British General might be deceiving him, and that the arrival of additional troops and vessels, which were hourly expected, might change the aspect of affairs, and it was decided in a council of war, held on the 14th, at General Ward's head quarters in Roxbury, that if Boston was not evacuated on the next day, Nook's Hill should be fortified "at all events."

On Friday, the 15th, the troops in Boston were paraded, preparatory to taking their departure, the inhabitants of the town being ordered, by proclamation of the crier, not to leave their houses from 11 o'clock, A. M., till night. But a strong easterly wind suddenly sprung up, and the soldiers returned to their barracks. On the next day, as we learn from a manuscript journal kept by a gentleman who continued in Boston during its occupancy by the British, "The wind continued east, and the troops

indulged in great mischief by breaking open stores, and tossing the contents (being private property) into the dock, destroying the furniture of every house they could get into, and otherwise committing every kind of wantonness which disappointed malice could suggest."

Washington had, of course, no knowledge of the outrages which the British were committing. He however had no idea of allowing them to remain unmolested any longer, let the wind be as it might. He determined, therefore, to bring matters to a crisis, and this end he thought could be best attained by completing the fortifications commenced on Nook's Hill, whatever opposition might be made. A large detachment of soldiers was ordered on Saturday night, March 16th, to take possession of the eminence, and erect thereon such forts as would place the enemy in so perilous a position that they must either retreat or be entirely destroyed. Operations were accordingly commenced in the evening.

The British discovered the movement, and commenced a severe cannonade. Nothing daunted, the Americans kept steadily at work, and erected a substantial fort upon the hill. The new Lawrence School-House on B street now marks the precise spot where the embankments were thrown up, the hill then being some forty or fifty feet higher than the present level of the street.

The British found, to their dismay, when day broke, that a strong fortification had been erected so near the city that they could not remain with safety another day. Says Gordon, in his History of the American War; published in London, "A breast-work was discovered this morning (March 17, 1776) to be thrown up by the Americans at Nook's Hill,



on Dorchester peninsula, which, from its proximity, had entire command of Boston Neck and the south end of the town—a work which the king's troops had most fearfully dreaded. In consequence of it, they began to embark at four o'clock in the morning, and were all on board and under sail before ten. What so hastened the British upon the sight of the works on Nook's Hill, was probably an apprehension that the Americans would possess themselves of Noddle's Island, and by erecting batteries at both places, enclose the harbor with the fire of their cannon."

So early in the morning did General Howe commence the embarkation of his army, that at nine o'clock a large number of troops and inhabitants left the wharves of Boston. No sooner was this observed in the American camp, than General Ward with about five hundred men marched in over the Neck, opened the gates of the town, and entered Boston just as the last remnant of that army, which had been a scourge to the metropolis of New England for eleven months, dropped down the harbor. With drums beating, and flags unfurled, the victorious troops marched triumphantly through the streets, greeted on all sides by the inhabitants of the town who so long had suffered the insults and reproaches of an insolent soldiery.

The following anecdote, connected with Dorchester Heights, is related. On the night of the proposed attack on the fortifications by the British, the sentinels stationed at the foot of the hill, overcome by fatigue, and anxious to escape from the severe storm which raged at the time, took shelter under a pile of boards, and were soon sound asleep. A waggish soldier at the top, who by some means ascertained the

whereabouts of the sleepers, set in motion one of the barrels filled with stones, directing it in such a way as to strike the boards. With a tremendous impetus it dashed down the steep declivity, and met in its course the pile of lumber. As may be supposed, the boards flew in all directions, and the sentinels, frightened out of their wits, and supposing that the enemy were making an attack, fired their guns and aroused the camp. After considerable alarm, the Americans discovered the cause of the firing, and returned to their quarters for the night.

As soon as Boston was evacuated, the greater part of the American army was ordered to New York, as it was supposed that the loyalists would attempt to gain that important post. One regiment only was left on Dorchester Heights. These soldiers resided in a building erected at the foot of the forts, near G street.

The inhabitants of Boston, as soon as the town was evacuated by the enemy, returned to their homes. Mechanics were again at work, the stores were opened, and public worship was resumed. The schools also were again opened, and the scholars, after a long vacation, returned to their accustomed studies.

On the same Sabbath that the British left Boston, Rev. Mr. Leonard preached a sermon appropriate to the occasion. The following extract, relating to this sermon, is from the "New England Chronicle and the Essex Gazette," of Wednesday, March 20, 1776; a newspaper published at that time in Cambridge, by Samuel Hall, but formerly issued from Boston:—

"Last Sabbath, a few hours after the enemy retreated from Boston, the Rev. Mr. Leonard preached an

excellent sermon, in the audience of His Excellency the General, and others of distinction, well adapted to the interesting event of the day, from these words in Exodus 14: 25:—‘*So that the Egyptians said, Let us flee from the face of Israel; for the Lord fighteth for them against the Egyptians.*’ ”

The news of the evacuation of Boston excited the greatest joy in the colonies, and it was everywhere received as a prestige of the future success of the Americans in the cause which they had so gallantly espoused. Congratulations were sent to Washington from all directions.

The Selectmen of Boston waited on the General, and in behalf of their constituents, presented to him the following address:—

“ May it please your Excellency—

“ The Selectmen of Boston, in behalf of themselves and fellow citizens, with all grateful respect, congratulate your Excellency on the success of your military operations, in the recovery of this town from an enemy, collected from the once respected Britons, who, in this instance, are characterized by malice and fraud, rapine and plunder, in every trace left behind them.

“ Happy are we that this acquisition has been made with so little effusion of human blood, which, next to the Divine favor, permit us to ascribe to your Excellency’s wisdom, evinced in every part of the long besiegement.

“ If it be possible to enhance the noble feelings of that person, who, from the most affluent enjoyments, could throw himself into the hardships of a campaign to save his country, uncertain of success, ’tis then possible this victory will heighten your Excellency’s happiness, when you consider you have not

only saved a large, elegant and once populous city from total destruction, but relieved the few wretched inhabitants from all the horrors of a besieged town, from the insults and abuses of a disgraced and chagrined army, and restored many inhabitants to their quiet habitations who had fled for safety to the bosom of their country.

"May your Excellency live to see the just rights of America settled on a firm basis, which felicity we sincerely wish you; and, at a late period, may that felicity be changed into happiness eternal."

To this address Washington made the following reply:—

"To the Selectmen and Citizens of Boston.

"Gentlemen—Your congratulations on the success of the American arms gives me the greatest pleasure. I most sincerely rejoice with you on being once more in possession of your former habitations; and, what greatly adds to my happiness, is that this desirable event has been effected with so little effusion of human blood.

"I am exceedingly obliged by the good opinion you are pleased to entertain of my conduct. Your virtuous efforts in the cause of freedom, and the unparalleled fortitude with which you have sustained the greatest of all human calamities, justly entitle you to the grateful remembrance of your American brethren; and I heartily pray that the hand of tyranny may never more disturb your repose, and that every blessing of a kind Providence may give happiness and prosperity to the town of Boston."

A joint committee from the Council and House of Representatives of Massachusetts, also presented him with an address expressive of their thanks, for the great services he had rendered the country, and

informing him of their respect and attachment. To this the General made a reply, in which he congratulated them on the recent evacuation of their metropolis, adding that he had only done his duty, and "wished for no other reward than that arising from a conscientious discharge of his important trust, and that his services might contribute to the establishment of freedom and peace, upon a permanent foundation, and merit the applause of his countrymen and every virtuous citizen."

As soon as Congress received the intelligence of the evacuation of Boston, on motion of John Adams a vote of thanks to Washington and his officers and soldiers was passed, and a gold medal was ordered to be struck and given to the General. John Adams, John Jay and Stephen Hopkins were also chosen to prepare a letter of thanks, of which the following is a copy:—

"Philadelphia, April 2, 1776.

"Sir,—It gives me the most sensible pleasure to convey to you, by order of Congress, the only tribute which a free people will ever consent to pay—the tribute of thanks and gratitude to their friends and benefactors.

"The disinterested and patriotic principles which led you to the field have also led you to glory; and it affords no little consolation to your countrymen to reflect that, as a peculiar greatness of mind induced you to decline any compensation for serving them, except the pleasure of promoting their happiness, they may without your permission bestow upon you the largest share of their affection and esteem.

"Those pages in the annals of America will record your title to a conspicuous place in the temple of fame, which shall inform posterity that, under your

direction, an undisciplined band of husbandmen, in the course of a few months, became soldiers, and that the desolation meditated against the country by a brave army of veterans, commanded by the most experienced generals, but employed by bad men in the worst of causes, was by the fortitude of your troops, and the address of their officers, next to the kind interposition of Providence, confined for near a year within such narrow limits as scarcely to admit more room than was necessary for the encampments and fortifications they lately abandoned.

"Accept, therefore, sir, the thanks of the United Colonies, unanimously declared by their delegates to be due to you, and the brave officers and troops under your command; and be pleased to communicate to them this distinguished mark of the approbation of their country.

"The Congress have ordered a gold medal, adapted to the occasion, to be struck, and, when finished, to be presented to you.

"I have the honor to be, with every sentiment of esteem, Sir, your most obedient and very humble servant,

JOHN HANCOCK, President.

To His Excellency, }  
General Washington." }

To this message General Washington returned the following answer:—

"New York, April 18, 1776.

"Sir,—Permit me, through, you, to convey to the honorable Congress the sentiments of gratitude I feel for the high honor they have done me in the public mark of approbation contained in your favor of the 2d instant, which came to hand last night. I

beg to assure them that it will ever be my highest ambition to approve myself a faithful servant of the public; and that, to be in any degree instrumental in procuring to my American brethren a restitution of their just rights and privileges, will constitute my chief happiness.

“Agreeably to your request, I have communicated, in general orders, to the officers and soldiers under my command, the thanks of Congress for their good behavior in the service; and am happy in having such an opportunity of doing justice to their merit. They were indeed, at first, ‘a band of undisciplined husbandmen;’ but it is (under God) to their bravery and attention to their duty that I am indebted for that success which has procured me the only reward I wish to receive—the affection and esteem of my countrymen.

“The medal, intended to be presented to me by your honorable body, I shall carefully preserve as a memorial of their regard.

“I beg leave to return you, Sir, my warmest thanks for the polite manner in which you have been pleased to express their sentiments of my conduct; and am, with sincere esteem and respect, Sir, yours and their most obedient and most humble servant,

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

To John Hancock, }  
President of Congress.” }

The medal was struck in Paris, from a die cut by Duvivier. On the obverse was a head of Washington in profile, and around it the following inscription:—

“GEORGIO WASHINGTON SVPREMO DVCI EXERCITVVM  
ADSSERTORI LIBERTATIS COMITIA AMERICANA.”

On the reverse is the town of Boston in the distance, with a fleet in view, under sail. Washington and his officers are on horseback in the fore-ground, and he is pointing to the ships as they depart from the harbor. The inscription is,

“HOSTIBVS PRIMO FVGATIS BOSTONIVM RECVPERATVM  
XVII MARTH MDCCLXXVI.”

As may be supposed, the news of the evacuation of Boston excited the greatest surprise in England. The Parliament saw with the deepest mortification the dishonor of the British arms, and there were spirited debates on the subject. General Howe's conduct was severely criticised, and the periodicals of the day were filled with comments on the loss of Boston. The chief point of complaint against General Howe was his long neglect of Dorchester Heights, which he intended to fortify some months before. Said a writer in an English paper, “Now I beg leave to ask Sir William Howe whether Boston was tenable or not? He had indeed staked his reputation as a general on the affirmative. If it was not, how could he, or his favorite engineer, overlook this (Dorchester) post? Could they suppose that the rebels, who, before winter, had made regular approaches to the foot of this hill, would fail, as soon as the season opened, to occupy the top of it? Why was not a post established there, as at Bunker Hill?”

The works erected on Dorchester Heights were built with much skill, and clearly showed that though the workmen were mere yeomen, still they were commanded by officers worthy of the important station they occupied. It has been truly remarked that “nothing but the enthusiasm of liberty could have



enabled the men of America to have constructed such works. In history they are equalled only by the lines and forts raised by Julius Cæsar to surround the army of Pompey." May the inhabitants of Mattapanock ever remember, with pride, that to the erection of the forts upon the heights which tower above us, we are in a great measure indebted for our liberty, our free institutions and our many privileges. May we strive to be worthy of the spot which is so celebrated in the history of our beloved Republic, and so long as the Mount shall bear the name of him who was "first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen," may we stand fast by that Constitution and those privileges which were bequeathed us by our fathers.

During the siege of Boston, the inhabitants of Mattapanock, from their proximity to the enemy, were in constant dread of being attacked. On the 19th of April, the day of the battle of Lexington, the South Bostonians were so fearful lest the British should reek their vengeance on the peninsula, that they all removed to Dorchester. Soon, however, the greater part returned to their residences, and although they were often in danger of being killed by the shells thrown from the Castle, yet for several months they received no material injury. An aged lady, a descendant of Mr. Foster, from whom much valuable information in regard to the early history of South Boston has been derived, when asked if there were any Tories residing in Mattapanock, replied, with great energy, "No, every one here was ready to fight till he died." It is said, however, that a Mr. Pratt, who lived with Mrs. Foster, and aided in tilling her farm, thought it a great waste to have a whole cargo of tea lost; and accordingly, when

Boston Harbor was made a Tea Pot by the patriotic Bostonians, he actually went down to the sea-shore, recovered a quantity of tea from the water, and hid it in Mrs. Foster's barn. He never used it, however, as his mistress was too much of a Whig to drink any of the contraband beverage.

In the latter part of the year 1775, Deacon James Blake, who resided at the extreme Point, became fearful lest he should receive injury from the British soldiers stationed at the Castle, who were in the habit of visiting Mattapanneck. Several times his family were grossly insulted, and at last he was forced to remove to Dorchester, leaving his house and barn to the mercy of the enemy. One day the old gentleman saw the red-coats point their cannon towards the Neck, and thinking they were about to practise a little, he sent his eldest son to take the glass windows out of the homestead, as there was great danger that they would be broken by the concussion. The young man immediately mounted his horse, and was soon busily engaged in obeying his father's command, when a cannon-ball passed directly through the window on which he was at work, and lodged in the back-wall of the house. Fortunately he was stooping to reach something on the floor at the time, and hence escaped with his life. Soon another ball came whizzing by the house, and passed very near the horse, which stood tied to a tree about a rod from the homestead. The young man then thought that the British were becoming rather social, and leaving the windows to their fate, he sprung upon his horse, and hastened with all speed to Dorchester.

Soon after this, a party of soldiers visited the Point, and placing a tar-barrel near Mr. Blake's dwelling, set fire to it, and the house was totally

destroyed. The barn was also consumed. The blaze was seen by Mr. Blake, at Dorchester, but he could do nothing to save his property.

In the early part of the year 1776, the weather was very cold, and the harbor was frozen over. The ice was quite thick, and improving the opportunity, on the night of the thirteenth of February, about five hundred grenadiers and light infantry crossed over to Mattapannock with the design of surprising the American guard, consisting of seventy men. They nearly succeeded in their design, but the guard managed to escape. Not wishing to return without some exploit, they set fire to several of the houses on the Neck, made prisoners of two persons, and then returned. A detachment of Americans was sent to attack them, but the red-coats escaped unharmed. Among the houses destroyed was the princely residence of Mrs. Foster, situated under the two old elms. This conflagration was perhaps one of the most dastardly acts committed during the war, as the inhabitants of Mattapannock were very inoffensive, making no attempts even to preserve their property from the enemy.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### FURTHER SETTLEMENT OF MATTAPANNOCK.

OF the history of Mattapannock from the year 1776 till 1804, we know but little. It is plain that during this period the number of families residing on the peninsula was not increased. There were few inducements to attract persons to select that

part of Dorchester for a residence, as the church and town school were situated at some distance, and at high tide it was very difficult to pass the causeway. An old gentleman who resided in Mattapanock at that period, informed us, in a late conversation, that he had often heard his father say, "We must rise early Sunday morning, or the water will prevent us from crossing the causeway." Often, he added, have we started by sunrise on a winter morning, and been obliged to sit in a cold church all day. At that time, as is well known, the meeting-houses were not warmed, and our ancestors were often obliged to perform their devotions with frost-bitten feet and chattering teeth.

As we have before remarked, the Town of Dorchester kept possession of a portion of the land at the Point. This land was called the Town Pasture, and in 1775 we find the following order passed in regard to it:—

"At a legal meeting of the freeholders of Dorchester, held Nov. 24, 1775, it was

"Voted,—To Sell the Wood off of the Town's Pasture at Dorchester Neck." At a later period of the meeting it was

"Voted,—That the above vote be so far reconsidered as that one or two trees be reserved for shade."

"Voted,—That Mr. Thomas Moseley sell S<sup>d</sup> Wood, and return the money into the Town Treasury."

From the following extract from the Town Records we are led to conclude that for more than one hundred and fifty years Mattapanock was used as a pasture by the inhabitants of Dorchester. Indeed, until within the last quarter of a century many acres of the peninsula were devoted to this purpose.

"At a meeting of the freeholders of Dorchester, held June 5, 1776, it was

“Voted,—That the Income of the Common Land at Powow Point this year be allowed towards maintaining a gate across the way leading on to Dorchester Neck.”

The greatest scourge which in those days visited the colonies of New England was the small-pox, and Boston and the towns in its vicinity were particularly afflicted. In 1702, 313 persons died of this disease in Boston; and in 1721, 5,729 persons—half of the number of inhabitants—had the small-pox, and 844 died. About this time Dr. Zabdiel Boylston, a distinguished physician of Boston, dared to inoculate with the small-pox three of his household. By this means the violence of the disease was much abated. The experiment, however, excited the greatest opposition both on the part of the medical faculty and the public. In due time, however, the benefits of inoculation were appreciated, and thousands voluntarily contracted the disease by this method. But it was found necessary to separate those who were inoculated from the healthy portion of the community. Accordingly, hospitals were opened in the different towns, and to these places all resorted who desired to have the small-pox. No one was allowed to approach these places, though generally those who were inoculated did not suffer much from the disease. In 1792, one of these hospitals was established at Dorchester Neck, and thither were sent all the small-pox patients of Dorchester. The following vote we find in the Town Records:—

“Nov. 2d, 1792. Voted,—That Doctor Phineas Holden have Liberty for a Hospital at Dorchester Neck.

“Voted,—That the House of Mr. Jonathan Bird

tertius, at Dorchester Neck, be used as a Hospital for Inoculating for the Small-Pox."

Previous to the year 1796, the passage between South Boston and Boston was passable to shipping craft only at high tide. On the 26th of February, 1796, however, an act was passed by the Legislature, incorporating John Lowell, Esq., Increase Sumner, Esq., Thomas Williams, Physician, John Reed, Esq., and Mr. Thomas Williams, Jr., into a company to dig and clear a channel to Roxbury. It was called the Roxbury Canal, and was of the greatest advantage to the inhabitants of that town. In process of years, the tide has washed away the land on each side, till it is now a wide opening.

In 1801 occurred the only duel which was ever fought in Mattapanock. It was a bright Sabbath morning in June, just at break of day, that several men were seen passing through South Boston towards the Point. As it was common for persons who resided in Boston to visit the peninsula on Sunday for recreation, little was thought of the matter. Arriving near the present position of Alger's Gun Yard, at the Point, they appeared to be for some minutes in consultation, and then two of the men were seen to measure off the ground. This attracted no particular attention, as it was supposed that the party were to engage in a game of quoits. Soon, however, the report of a pistol was heard, and soon after another broke upon the stillness of the morning. No alarm was excited by these reports, as it was thought the men might be firing at a target. Soon, however, a portion of the party were seen hastening away, while at the same time the remainder slowly bore along the insensible bleeding body of one of their company. He was taken into the

house of Mr. Blake, and every thing done to save his life, but he died in a few minutes.

It appeared that two men, named Rand and Miller, fell into a dispute, and determined to settle the matter by a duel. Accordingly, they proceeded to the Point, accompanied by their seconds and several of their friends, to seek satisfaction for their wounded honor. Rand had his first shot, and, although Miller was a very portly man, did not hit his adversary. Miller's turn then came, but feeling assured that he should kill Rand, he attempted to settle the dispute. But no, Rand must have satisfaction, and Miller fired. Rand fell, and Miller fled to New York, where he amassed an immense fortune, and died a few years since.

This occurrence, as it may be supposed, produced great excitement among the people of Dorchester Neck. To have a man killed in their midst on Sunday morning seemed a dreadful thing, and indeed must have struck all with horror. Mrs. Blake, into whose house the deceased was taken, is still alive, and recollects distinctly the events of that morning.

As Boston and Dorchester were wholly disconnected by land, the passage to and from the former place by our citizens was either in boats or around through Roxbury. On the evening of December 24th, 1803, a most distressing accident occurred between the two places. Three young men, James Pike, aged 28 years, David Williams, Jr., aged 20 years, and Moses Whitney, aged 17 years, while returning from Boston to their residences on Dorchester Neck, in a small boat, were upset, and all drowned. Mr. Whitney's father had accompanied the three young men to Boston, and intended returning with them, but arrived at the wharf just after they had pushed off, and

was obliged to go round by land. But for this moment's tardiness, he must have shared the fate of the others. The friends of the deceased waited in suspense till the morning, when the hat of one of the young men was found on the beach. Their bodies were shortly after recovered, and the funeral obsequies were performed in the church, where a large concourse of people were assembled. An appropriate dirge was sung by the choir, and a very solemn address made by Rev. Thaddeus M. Harris, who had then been Pastor of the church in Dorchester for about ten years.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### ANNEXATION TO BOSTON.

In the latter part of the year 1803, a number of distinguished citizens of Boston, among whom were William Tudor, Gardiner Green, Jonathan Mason, and Harrison Gray Otis, with an impression, which time has shown was well founded, that Boston was destined to be one of the most important commercial emporiums in America, and that it was not of sufficient size to accommodate the business of the place, bought a large number of acres of land on Dorchester Neck. It is said that they were advised to make this purchase by Joseph Woodward, a native of Tewksbury, who selected Mattapanock as being land most easily annexed to Boston; and in order to render it accessible, it was proposed to build a bridge. In the early part of the year 1804, a petition was presented to the Town of Boston, by the



proprietors of lands at said Neck, for its consent to the annexation of that tract of land to the Town. This petition was referred to a large committee chosen to consider on what conditions the annexation should be made.

The committee subsequently reported several conditions, and the freeholders of the Town of Boston were called together to consult on the matter. On the 17th of January, it was

“Voted,—That the Town will consent that the Lands on Dorchester Neck, agreeably to the Petition of the Owners, shall be annexed to and incorporated with the Town of Boston, provided it can be done on such conditions as the Town shall hereafter agree to.”

Another meeting was called on the 30th of January, and so great was the excitement that no business could be transacted. The greater part of the day was spent in angry debates, and at last it was deemed advisable to adjourn the meeting till the next day, when it was hoped a better state of feeling might exist. This was done, and at the adjourned meeting it was decided that if the Neck was annexed,

“The Proprietors of the land to be annexed shall consent that the Selectmen of the Town of Boston shall immediately lay out such Streets, Public Squares and Market Places as they shall judge necessary for the public accommodation, without any compensation for the land so appropriated.”

On the twenty-fifth day of February, at a meeting of the Selectmen of the Town of Boston,

“The Chairman was directed to apply to the Senators of the County and the Representatives of the Town, to inform them that the Board think it im-

portant that a clause should be inserted in the Bill now under the consideration of the Legislature for annexing Dorchester Point to the Town; that the Streets, Market Places and Public Squares shall be laid out by the Selectmen, or a Committee chosen by the Town, without any compensation in money being required by the Proprietors for the land taken for such purposes."

In the mean time the petitioners were making the most strenuous efforts to effect the passage of the bill. They had bought a large number of acres at Mattapanock at a very cheap rate, and they were convinced that if the bill should pass, the property would immediately rise in value. It was also considered highly important to the Town of Boston that this Neck should be annexed, as it was then supposed the peninsula itself could not contain many more inhabitants.

The inhabitants of Dorchester, however, were very much opposed to the change. They considered Mattapanock as belonging to them, and were determined to retain their property if possible.

At a meeting of the freeholders and other inhabitants of the Town of Dorchester, qualified by law to vote in town affairs, held January 23, 1804, of which Moses Everett, Esq., was chosen Moderator, it was

"Voted,—That the Town have no Objection to a Bridge being Erected from Dorchester to Boston.

"Voted,—To remonstrate against Dorchester Neck being set off and annexed to the Town of Boston.

"Voted,—To Choose a Committee to Remonstrate to the General Court against Dorchester Neck being set off and annexed to the Town of Boston.

"Voted,—that S<sup>d</sup> Committee consist of Nine persons :—Ebenezer Wales, Esq., Stephen Badlam, Esq.,

John Howe, Esq., Mr. Samuel Withington, Major James Robinson, with Ebenezer Tolman, Mr. Lemuel Crane, Mr. Thomas Moseley, Mr. Edward W. Baxter, the present Selectmen.

“Voted,—That the above Committee be requested to attend to all matters and things for the Interest of the Town of Dorchester, as it relates to the Petition of Wm. Tudor, Esq., and others, praying that the Lands on Dorchester Neck may be annexed to and incorporated with the Town of Boston.”

This committee immediately prepared to oppose the passage of the Bill, and drew up a strong remonstrance (See Appendix A), which was presented to the General Court.

A memorial was presented to the Selectmen of Boston by those in favor of the movement. (See Appendix B.)

At a town meeting held Feb. 16th, 1804, the committee appointed to draw up the remonstrance against annexation, reported as follows:—

“Pursuant to a Vote of the Town of Dorchester on the 23d of January last, Your Committee have attended to the business assigned them, and have preferred to the Honorable Legislature a Written Remonstrance to prevent that part of this Town called the Neck from being set off to the Town of Boston as prayed for in a Petition of William Tudor, Esq., and others; and notwithstanding your Committee have opposed the same in every stage of the business, a Report is made in favor thereof by a Joint Committee of both Houses, without any compensation being allowed for it to the Town of Dorchester; and your Committee not feeling themselves authorized to proceed any further in a business so highly important, considered it expedient that the

Town be called together, and are ready to give all the Information they have obtained on the subject.

EBEN'R WALES,

In behalf of the Committee."

This Report was accepted, and a verbal report was then made by one of the Committee, in which it was stated that the sum of \$6,000 might be obtained, provided the Town would oppose the Petitioners no farther.

It is probable that the Town would have accepted this sum, and made no more opposition; indeed, they had nearly decided on this measure, when John Howe, Esq., an influential citizen of Dorchester, arose, and with great emphasis called on the town to retract, and make no agreement by which they were to lose the most valuable portion of their territory. He was certain that the Legislature would not grant leave to annex Dorchester Neck to Boston, provided the citizens of Dorchester were opposed to it.

This speech had great influence over the assembly, and as soon as he sat down, it was moved and

"Voted,—Not to accept the 6000 Dollars on the conditions they are offered.

"Voted,—That the Selectmen be a Committee to attend to the Petition of William Tudor, Esq., and others, now pending before the General Court, and that they act in all Matters according to their Discretion for the Interest of the Town."

A motion was made to withdraw the Remonstrance, but it was

"Voted,—Not to withdraw said Remonstrance."

Subsequently, the petitioners, through Harrison Gray Otis, offered \$20,000 to the Town of Dorchester provided they would not oppose the bill. This offer was rejected, and every effort was made to prevent its passage.

However, after considerable debate, on the 6th of March, a bill was passed by the Legislature, annexing Dorchester Neck to Boston. (See Appendix C.)

By this means the citizens of Dorchester lost the jurisdiction over Mattapanock, and also the money offered, much to the chagrin of those who had opposed the acceptance of the proffered sum. Land at South Boston—for from the passage of the bill it took this name—immediately increased in value. Lots that could be bought in 1803 for \$40 an acre, now sold for \$400 or \$500, and a new impulse seemed to be given to the Neck. Many purchased largely, and South Boston immediately became quite a noted place. The population also began to increase, and those who owned land on the Neck suddenly became rich. And yet two, out of the twelve tax-payers who lived in South Boston, never would give their consent to the separation, although one of them held a farm of 52 acres, which was thereby so greatly increased in value.

At the same time that the Act was passed by which Dorchester Neck was annexed to the Town of Boston, other acts were passed, authorizing the building of a bridge from the Neck to the town, and also the construction of a street within the town, leading from the bridge to the more populous parts of it. As we intend, however, to make this bridge the subject of more extended remark in another chapter, we pass to other topics.

When annexed, South Boston contained about six hundred acres of upland, and nineteen persons who paid a poll tax resided in the place. The following is a list of the proprietors at that time, with the tax they paid.

*State, Town and County Tax, 1804.*

Names.	No. Polls.	Poll Tax.	Value Real Estate.	Real Estate Tax.	Total Tax.
Blake James, . . .			\$7,000	\$43 63	\$43 68
Bird Jonathan, 3d, . .	1	1 75	15,400	96 10	97 85
Bird Samuel and Ezekiel,			2,700	16 85	16 85
Bird Thomas, . . .			600	3 74	3 74
Bird Jacob, . . .	1	1 75			1 75
Bird Elijah, . . .	1	1 75			1 75
Clap Lemuel, . . .	1	1 75	3,700	23 09	24 84
Clap Jason (Brick yd),			2,000	12 48	12 48
Clap Mary (Widow), . .			2,700	16 85	16 85
Cobb Samuel, . . .			3,300	20 61	20 61
Champney John, . . .			2,200	13 73	13 73
Deluce John, . . .	1	1 75	800	4 99	6 74
Everett Moses, Esq., . .			6,000	37 44	37 44
Farrington John, 2d, . .	1	1 75	7,800	48 67	50 42
Gore Jeremiah, . . .			500	3 12	3 12
Gray John, . . .			1,200	7 49	7 49
Gould Abraham, . . .	1	1 75	27,000	168 48	170 23
Harrington Rufus, . . .	1	1 75	800	4 99	6 74
Humphries James, . . .			750	4 68	4 68
“ (Guardian)			800	4 99	4 99
Hartshorn Oliver, . . .			750	4 68	4 68
Higginson Stephen, . . .			4,800	29 95	29 95
Leeds Thomas, . . .	1	1 75	600	3 74	5 49
Loring Israel, . . .	1	1 75	800	4 99	6 74
Marshall Moses, . . .	1	1 75	300	1 87	3 62
Munroe Thomas, . . .	1	1 75			1 75
Newman Henry, . . .	1	1 75	10,600	66 14	67 89
Payson Samuel, . . .			1,300	8 11	8 11
Robbins Edward, . . .			3,000	18 72	18 72
Spear Lemuel, . . .	1	1 75	2,500	15 60	17 35
Spear Aaron, . . .	1	1 75	400	2 50	4 25
Temple James, . . .	1	1 75			1 75
Tudor William, Esq., . .			12,600	78 62	78 62
Tileston Onisepherus, . .	1	1 75			1 75
Williams David, . . .	1	1 75	500	3 12	4 87
Woodward Joseph, . . .	1	1 75	15,800	98 59	100 34
	19	33 25	139,200	868 61	901 86

Value of Real Estate, \$139,200. Personal, nothing. Number of Polls, 19. Poll Tax, \$33 25. Real Estate Tax, \$868 61. Total Tax, \$901 86.

In the year 1805, Judge Tudor, desirous of increasing the inducements to settle in South Boston, and feeling confident that money invested in that place would pay a good interest, built the large block of brick buildings situated at the corner of Broadway and A street, and usually known as the “BAR-RACKS,” or “BRINLEY BLOCK.” Three of the houses

were finished in the most magnificent style, while the fourth, the most westerly, was not completed inside till some years afterwards.

It will be remembered that within a few years the front doors of these houses were in the second story, and were reached by a long flight of steps. When they were built, Broadway was not graded, and these doors were on a level with the ground. Subsequently the street was dug down, and stories built beneath. Still more recently, these front doors have been changed into windows of the second story, and the flight of steps removed.

At the same time, a Mr. Murphy built the house now known as the "SOUTH BOSTON HOTEL." When first constructed, it was only half as large as at the present time. As soon as it was completed, Mr. Murphy opened it as a Public House, hanging out as his sign a large golden ball. Mr. Ross, a soap manufacturer, also, in 1805, built the large brick building at the corner of Fourth and Turnpike streets, for some years occupied by Mr. Holmes as the "TWELFTH WARD HOTEL." Mr. Ross used it as a dwelling house for some time, and it then passed into other hands, and was used as a private dwelling.

These buildings, with Mr. Gould's, under the old elms, near the corner of Fourth and E streets, were the only brick buildings in the place. Soon after the annexation, quite a number of wooden houses were built, occupied partly by persons who formerly resided in Boston proper, and partly by the workmen engaged in Mr. Ross's Soap Factory. Unfortunately for those who built the "Block," and the "Hotel," South Boston did not increase in importance so rapidly as was expected. For a long time, three of the four houses in the "Block" re-

mained unoccupied, and the rent for the other only amounted to \$120 per annum. After keeping the Golden Ball Hotel for four or five years, Mr. Murphy gave up the business, and the house was occupied by Mr. Hunting as a private residence for twenty-eight years.

Abraham Gould, Esq., mentioned above, was for many years a prominent citizen of Mattapanock. His wife was a direct descendant of the Fosters who have been alluded to in previous chapters. As seen by the list of tax payers in 1804, he then held a large amount of real estate—more than any other individual in the place. He died in the brick house just spoken of, on Fourth street, in February, 1840, in the 84th year of his age. Mr. Gould was on guard duty at Nook's Hill on the night of the erection of the forts on the Heights. (See Appendix D.)

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### BRIDGES AND AVENUES.

PREVIOUS to the annexation of Dorchester Neck to Boston, there was no means of direct communication between the two peninsulas, as already mentioned, except by boats. There were but ten families then residing on Mattapanock, and the travel between the town and the Neck was very small. Small row-boats plied across to accommodate those who might wish to pass, running from Wind-mill Point, now the site of the Planing Mill in Sea street, to the foot of B street, and from Rainsford's Lane across to the foot of Fourth street. When, however,



in 1803, the proposition was made to annex Dorchester Neck to Boston, it was judged necessary to provide some better mode of communication between the places. A scheme was made to build a bridge from Wind-mill Point across to the Neck. A petition was sent to the town, asking for the privilege of having Dorchester Neck annexed to Boston, "upon the single condition that the inhabitants of Boston will procure a bridge to be erected between Boston and Dorchester Neck."

And now commenced a discussion, which, perhaps, excited public attention and feeling more than any that has ever been brought before the Bostonians. Several confused meetings of the citizens were held on the subject. At one time they would pass resolutions, which at their next assemblage they would nullify. The greatest excitement prevailed, and it was necessary sometimes to adjourn the meetings because order could not be maintained. The chief subject of dispute seemed not to be as to the feasibility of annexing Dorchester Neck, and of building a bridge, but as to the conditions upon which it should be annexed, and where the bridge should be located.


At last, on the 31st of January, 1804, the town agreed to the proposition of annexation, provided "that the place from which and the terms on which the bridge should be built, shall be left entirely with the Legislature." The Representatives from Boston were authorized to favor the measure.

It was then proposed to build a bridge from South street to the Neck, nearly in the present position of the North Free Bridge. In the "New England Palladium" for February 17, 1804, we find the following record.

“ SENATE.

*Tuesday, Feb. 14.*

“ NEW BRIDGE.—The joint Committee on the petition of William Tudor and others, praying for leave to build a Bridge from Boston to Dorchester Neck, reported, That the petitioners have leave to bring in a bill, authorizing them to build a Bridge from South street in Boston, to Dorchester Neck, as set forth in the petition; agreeably to such rules, regulations and conditions as shall be prescribed by the Legislature.

“  We learn, that the committee report as their opinion, that the conditions on which the leave be given, shall be, that the Proprietors of the bridge shall furnish, from the 1st of April to the 1st December, each year, a boat, with two hands, whose business it shall be, at all times, to aid all vessels in passing the draw, that they may not be necessitated to cast anchor:—That the Proprietors of the Bridge shall pay *Eleven Hundred Dollars*, annually, to the wharf-holders at the South end and at *Roxbury*; which sum shall annually be expended to promote the navigation above the bridge:—That it shall be lawful for the proprietors, after the expiration of three years, to make application to the Governor, who shall be authorized to appoint three persons to hear the parties, and decide on any new conditions they shall deem just and equitable, provided they shall not raise the sum to be paid annually; and that every five years after, it shall be lawful to make a similar application, that similar process may be had thereon.”

On the petition for the annexation of Dorchester Neck to the town of Boston, the committee reported in favor of the petitioners, on condition that two

cross Streets be laid out by the petitioners, one running E. and W., the other N. and S., and that three lots be appropriated for public purposes, viz.—one for a meeting-house, one for a school-house, and one for a burial-place.

The inhabitants at the south end of the town were very desirous that the bridge should be built from Orange street, in the present position of the South Free Bridge. The newspapers of the early part of the year 1804, were filled with communications on the subject, some merely squibs, while others occupied several columns. Different editors took different views of the subject, and the matter was most fully discussed both by the public and in the legislative halls.

At this juncture the inhabitants of the south end formed a plan to change the position of the bridge, offering, if it was built to accord to their wishes, to construct a commodious street across the flats from Rainsford's Lane to the head of the proposed bridge. They presented a petition to the General Court to be incorporated for this purpose, upon the presumption that no liberty would be granted for the erection of any avenue to South Boston northward of this bridge, "*unless at some future period the increased settlement of this part of the country should be such that the public exigencies should require the same.*"

This plan met with so favorable a reception, that the Dorchester Point proprietors were induced to make a compromise with the South-enders, and the South street bridge was abandoned.

On the 23d of February, the joint Committee made a report on the basis of the compromise, which was accepted, and

On Saturday, Feb. 25, a bill to incorporate certain persons "for the purpose of making a street from Rainsford Lane to the Bridge proposed to be built from, or near, the Town's Landing at Dorchester Neck," was read for the first time.

On Monday, Feb. 27, it had a second reading, and on Thursday, March 1, the bill was passed to be engrossed.

On Tuesday, March 6th, three highly important bills were signed by Governor Strong; viz., one annexing Dorchester Neck to Boston, another incorporating the Proprietors of Boston South Bridge, and a third incorporating the Front Street Corporation. (See Appendix E.)

No sooner was the act authorizing the Bridge passed, than workmen began to drive the piles necessary for its erection, and in the summer of 1805 it was completed. It was one thousand five hundred and fifty-one feet in length, and cost the proprietors about \$56,000. On the 1st day of October, soon after it was completed, it was the scene of a grand military display, concluded by a sham fight.

Before its completion, however, it was manifest that its location did not suit a large portion of those interested in South Boston. The compromise made with the South end people did not seem to them a sufficient reason for changing the location of the bridge, and no sooner had the General Court assembled in January, 1805, than petitions were presented praying for a bridge from Wheeler's Point. As the South Bridge was not yet completed, it was undoubtedly the design to prevent, by the passage of the new bill, the building of the Bridge from Front street.

Public opinion on the subject was very much di-

vided. Those who were interested at the South End were bitterly opposed to the passage of the Free Bridge Act, while those interested in South Boston and also the whole of the South Shore towns were in favor of a bridge from Wheeler's Point. The newspapers of that time were made the medium through which hundreds of communications on the subject were presented to the public. We have been much interested in looking over the files of the *Columbian Centinel*, *Independent Chronicle*, and *New England Palladium*. Benj. Russell, the famous editor of the *Centinel*, after publishing a lengthy communication in favor of the new bridge, in his paper of Jan. 16, 1805—says:

“In answer to a note which accompanied the preceding communication, we observe, that from the extensive circulation of the *Centinel*, we expect numerous communications on the subject therein broached. We therefore take this early occasion to notify the parties that the most exact impartiality will be observed by us; that we shall give the pieces on both sides as early publicity as may be consistent with other duties; and that we shall demand a compensation for our labor.”

It is clear that he saw the interest manifested on the subject, and by thus making his paper the organ of neither party, but admitting at the same time the communications of both, he rendered it popular to the public, and undoubtedly profitable to himself.

As it was important that the sense of the people should be ascertained, a town meeting was called on Monday, February 4, 1805, at Faneuil Hall. The attendance was very large, and the Hall was so crowded that it was deemed advisable to adjourn the meeting till Thursday, when a more commodious

place could be procured. Applications were made for leave to occupy several of the large churches, but only two societies were willing to grant the request; these were the South-End Society and the Universalist Society. It was decided to occupy the latter. The meeting was very lengthy, and the time was spent in angry discussion, and at a late hour, without accomplishing any thing, the meeting was adjourned till Friday. Again there was the most bitter wrangling; but after a long debate, those in favor of the bridge gained a majority, and passed a resolution instructing the Senators of Suffolk County and the Representatives for Boston in General Court assembled, to aid by every possible endeavor the passage of an act authorizing the building of a bridge from Wheeler's Point, in a line with South street, to South Boston. Notwithstanding the passage of this resolution, the opponents of the new bridge were too strong in the General Court to permit it to have much influence, and on the 20th of February, 1805, leave of withdrawal was given to those who petitioned for a bridge from Wheeler's Point to South Boston.

In January, 1807, a petition was again presented, praying that leave might be granted for the building of a bridge from this same Point to South Boston. Again there was a long discussion, both in the public prints and in the halls of legislation. Sometimes the disputants even came to blows, and it is said that a leader of one of the parties, being in conversation with a member of the legislature, was offended at something said, and gave the law-maker a sound kick with the toe of his boot. The most bitter feeling existed among the parties, and a feud was made which even now occasionally shows itself. Several town

meetings were held about this time to discuss the matter; and it is said that at one of them the excitement was so great it was feared there would be a riot. The meeting at that time was held in the Old South Church, and as the leaders of one party were attempting to address the assembly, one of the opponents with all the noise possible was attempting, in another part of the church, to drown the voice of the other speaker. Confusion reigned supreme, and all was in an uproar. At this juncture an aged and respected citizen forced his way through the crowd, entered the pulpit, and calling for silence, said:

"Citizens, I demand to be heard. I declare myself moderator of this meeting, and call it to order. Citizens, out of respect to my age, in deference to my snowy locks, I call on you to listen. Let the mob be quiet and refrain from any injudicious acts."

After a time the meeting was adjourned to a future period, when similar disorderly scenes were enacted, and similar attempts to quell the disturbance were made.

In February, 1807, the Senate passed a bill authorizing the building of a bridge from Wheeler's Point, and it was sent to the House of Representatives for concurrence. The latter body, however, refused to concur, but a notice of reconsideration was made, and on the next day the matter was again discussed. As, however, there were only 226 present, 38 less than when the bill was rejected, a vote could not be taken, and the bill was returned to the Senate. This body non-concurred in the rejection, and a Committee of Conference was chosen. After a lengthy discussion the bill was voted down, and the project of building the South Street Bridge was again deferred.

The Dorchester and Milton Turnpike, which was another important work connected with the growth and prosperity of South Boston, was constructed in 1805, by a corporation entirely distinct from the one which built the bridge. It extended from the bridge to Milton Lower Mills; and toll, as established by law, was taken for all carriages and beasts passing over it. It continued in the hands of the Company till 1854, when all its right therein was purchased with money raised by subscription, and the road accepted by the town of Dorchester, as a public highway, which is now known as Dorchester Avenue.

During the time of the dispute respecting the bridges, one of the land-holders at South Boston built out a wharf in the line of the Dorchester Turnpike. He did not perform the whole off-hand, but accomplished the work a few feet at a time, until at last it extended nearly to the channel. One night, a cob-wharf was floated around from the North End, and moored at Wheeler's Point, reaching to the South Boston wharf, and thus making an avenue from shore to shore.

The object of this latter act was very obvious; and no sooner did the morning dawn than the South-End people saw the bridge which had been built in a night, and, greatly exasperated, a party of them, dressed as Indians, went and cut away the cob-wharf, and giving it a push into the current, sent it sailing down the harbor.

About two weeks after, in the night time, another party, disguised in the same manner, cut away the wharf on the South Boston side. The remains of some of the piles of which this wharf was constructed, could long be seen on the easterly side of the bridge, nearly opposite the Fulton Iron Foundry.



No prosecution was made, although the names of the persons who instigated these acts were well known. Both parties were very rash, and committed many acts which they undoubtedly lamented afterwards. The public feeling ran very high. Rarely has there been a subject which so absorbed the attention of the whole community, the Bridge and the Anti-Bridge parties being at that time as well known as the different political parties are at present.

After the failure of the various attempts for the passage of a bill granting a bridge from Wheeler's Point to South Boston, the public seemed for a time to have concluded that it was useless to make any further exertions in favor of the project, and the matter rested for nearly fifteen years. There were some, however, who were still firm in the belief that a bridge was absolutely necessary for the interests both of South Boston and of Boston itself, and who embraced every opportunity to agitate the question. Among these, none were more zealous than Joseph Woodward, Esq., a gentleman well known to most of the "oldest citizens" of South Boston, and he to whom is due the credit of originating the plan of annexing South Boston to Boston. During the period which has been appropriately called "The Dark Ages of the Bridge Question," he endeavored by every possible means to bring the subject again before the public mind.

In 1823, the land proprietors at South Boston began again publicly to agitate the subject. Public meetings were held in the city, and quite a number of meetings of the citizens of South Boston were held in the Hawes School-house. Nothing definite was done, however, till at a meeting of the Board of Aldermen (for Boston had now been a city for two

years), held on Monday evening, March 8, 1824:—  
“On petition of Lot Wheelwright and others, a warrant was issued for calling a general meeting of the citizens, on Monday next, at 10 o'clock, in Faneuil Hall, to give in their yeas and nays on the question—

“Is it for the interest and convenience of the city to have a free bridge or dam, from Wheeler's Point to South Boston, provided the same can be effected without any expense to the city, and whether they will instruct the City Government to petition for the same, and instruct their Senators and Representatives in the next Legislature to labor to support such a measure.”

We find in the *Columbian Centinel*, of March 13, 1824, the following article on the subject, which speaks for itself:—

“*Meeting on Monday.* No less than five articles, *pro* and *con*, on the subject which is to be voted on at the public meeting notified for Monday next, are on our table. To insert them would occupy some columns, to select might give offence; and the subject having been before the public for years, and most minds made up on it, we ask leave to let them lie on the table.”

On Monday, March 15th, the meeting of the citizens was held. We copy an account of it, *ad verbatim*, from one of the newspapers of the day.

#### “GENERAL MEETING.

“On Monday a general meeting of the citizens was held at Faneuil Hall, on notification of the Mayor and Aldermen, on the petition of a competent number of citizens, to determine, by yeas and nays, whether, in the opinion of the citizens at large, it is

for the interest and convenience of the city to have a Free Bridge or Dam, from Wheeler's Point to South Boston, provided the same can be effected without any expense to the city—and whether they will instruct the City Council to petition for the same, and their Senators and Representatives in the next Legislature to support such a measure.

“The warrant for the meeting was read by the City Clerk, and Francis J. Oliver, Esq., was chosen moderator. The Mayor and Aldermen occupied the old Selectmen's seats. The notification of the meeting having expressed that the citizens were convened for the purpose of giving their *yeas* and *nays* on the question propounded in the notification, much impatience was exhibited by a very crowded Hall, and a great reluctance to attend to any debate on the subject.

“It was moved by Mr. Kendall, that the ballot for the yeas and nays be opened.

“Before this was put, A. Townsend, Esq., moved the indefinite postponement of the whole subject, and spoke at some length in opposition to the project of the Bridge. [He was frequently interrupted with cries of ‘Question, Question.’] Judge Orne opposed the postponement, and advocated the proposition for the Bridge. He was followed by Hon. Mr. Gorham, who considered himself obliged to explain the principle which induced him to oppose the project when before the Senate during the last session. The call for the question then became general; and the motion to *postpone the subject indefinitely* was negatived by a large majority. The ballot by yeas and nays was then commenced, a vote having been passed to close it at 5 o'clock, P. M. At the close of the poll, the following result was announced—

Yeas . . . . .	2847
Nays . . . . .	779

"The question having been determined in favor of a Free Bridge, the meeting was dissolved. We have seldom seen a political excitement more intense than that exhibited on the present occasion."

From this account we can understand the feeling of the public upon the subject. There were, as we have before said, two parties. The one interested in Front street and in the South Tell Bridge—the other, land-holders at South Boston, owners of flats in the vicinity of Wheeler's Point, and the citizens of the towns on the South Shore. Agreeably to the vote passed at the meeting of the citizens, the City Government petitioned the General Court, at its session in May, 1824, to have a free bridge from Wheeler's Point to South Boston in a line with South Street. Instructions were given the Senators and Representatives to aid by every possible means the passage of the bill, and now came a struggle perhaps unparalleled in the legislature of our State. Each party endeavored to influence all who came in their way, and lobbying was all in vogue. The matter, although seemingly of a sectional nature, nevertheless excited the feelings of the Representatives from all parts of the State; and the discussions of the Anti-Bridge and the Bridge parties occupied the attention and a greater part of the time of the Legislature.

Notwithstanding the most strenuous efforts of some of the most influential citizens of Boston, the subject took a political turn, and while the party now known as Whigs, favored the Bridge, the Democrats were as utterly opposed to it. Even the election of municipal officers in Boston was based on the famous Bridge question, and the inquiry, "Is he in favor of the Bridge?" was made by hundreds previous to casting a vote for City Officers.

At that time Ward XII. consisted of the South End and South Boston, the two antagonists in the struggle. As may be supposed, under the state of feeling which then existed, there was very little union, and when a meeting was called to nominate four Common Councilmen to represent the Ward, there was great excitement. The South Bostonians contended for two of the four Councilmen, while the South-Enders were only willing to grant one. A caucus was held, and two South-Enders and one South Boston man were nominated, while the fourth was left as a point of dispute. Both parties were dissatisfied, and both held private caucuses. The South-Enders nominated four persons from their district, while the South Bostonians nominated as their candidates four men who resided in South Boston. The day for election came, and the South-End voters succeeded in electing their four men, much to the chagrin of the people of South Boston, who were thus left unrepresented in the City Council.

At the State House, the discussions on the subject of the new bridge were earnest and exciting, and often quite personal. To show the state of feeling, we will relate the following incident. A warm upholder of the project was one day speaking very earnestly on the subject, much to the discomfort of the opposite side. The speaker chanced to have left a fine blue broadcloth cloak hanging in the back part of the hall. When he had finished his speech, he retired, and on taking down his cloak, he found that some one with a jack-knife, in the heat of passion, had cut it into shreds. Who it was that committed this act, was never known. The cloak is still in existence, and is preserved as a memorial of the struggle for the South Street Bridge.

At another time, one of the Representatives was making an eloquent appeal in favor of the bridge, when an opponent seated near, and exasperated by his words, shouted with an oath, "That's a lie!" The speaker then proceeded a few sentences farther, when again, "That's a lie!!" and yet again, "That's another lie!!" was shouted by the person sitting near, and thus was the pleader rudely disturbed till he had concluded his address.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### BRIDGES AND AVENUES.

SUCH is an account of the struggle which took place before the bill authorizing the building of the North Free Bridge was passed. Over twenty years elapsed from the time the question was first discussed, ere the Legislature decided to grant the request of the landholders of South Boston for a new avenue. Hard had been the struggle, but it was now over, and seemingly a new era for the interests of South Boston was about to dawn. With increased facilities for intercourse, it was expected that business would be improved. (See Appendix F.)

But now, a new difficulty presented itself. Who was to build the bridge? The city was unwilling to move in the matter; no single individual was able to take hold and build it. The lowest estimated cost was \$30,000, and how could this sum be raised? A committee was chosen to select the best method of obtaining the required amount, and they proposed a direct tax on all the inhabitants and landholders

of South Boston. A tax was accordingly levied, and a large proportion took hold in good earnest. The tax, however, was binding on no one, and after collecting all that was possible, the sum total amounted to much less than the required amount. It was evident that resort must be had to some other plan in order to obtain the desired end. Accordingly, a proposition was made to have the stock divided into shares, and to solicit subscriptions from all interested. Again did the South Bostonians, eagerly desirous of securing the benefit of the proposed bridge, come forward and contribute largely. Still, the sum was not sufficient to warrant the Committee to proceed and build the Bridge. Things looked dark. Every attempt had been made to obtain the desired amount, but as yet the sum was far from sufficient.

A meeting of those most interested in the matter was held, and after long debate, the Chairman remarked, "Gentlemen, there is but one way to do; either the bridge project must be given up, the charter cast aside, and the labor of long years lost, or we must contribute a sufficient sum to erect the avenue. Gentlemen, I hold in my hand a list of names against each of which is placed a certain sum, which you are invited to loan to the Bridge Company, with the proviso that the lenders shall be entitled to receive all that remains after the completion of the bridge." Some of the men were "doomed," as it was called, to \$1,000, some \$1,500, and one or two as high as \$2,000. No time was given for deliberation, and it was requested that each give his promise before he left the room. One gentleman, a zealous friend of the bridge, but one who felt unwilling to put his hand into his purse in the manner proposed, was seen to creep towards the door. The Chairman

had his attention directed to the person, and with loud voice, he said, "It is of no use; either you must make the loan or give up the project." At last, all, save one, agreed to loan the amount for which they were "doomed," although it was known at the time that it was extremely doubtful whether any return would be made.

The Committee then proceeded to erect a bridge. Proposals were solicited, and at last the Messrs. Newcombs, of Quincy, were selected to erect the abutments on the South Boston side; Wm. Wright and A. A. Dame, the abutments on the Boston side; and Samuel Chittendon was engaged to erect the wood work. And here a new difficulty presented itself. The act of incorporation did not specifically define the position of the bridge, and there were different opinions as to the best site. At last, a wealthy gentleman of South Boston, the owner of much real estate in the vicinity of the proposed bridge, and the proprietor of the flats on the westerly side of Turnpike street, offered, if they would run the bridge directly to his flats in a line with Turnpike street, to erect at his own expense the necessary sea wall on the westerly side. The proposition was accepted, and the abutments of the bridge were run in a direct line with Turnpike street, and then a turn was made, and the wood work was laid directly in a line with Sea street. Those in the least conversant with the situation of the bridge remember the turn near the Fulton Iron Foundry, and this is the cause of its occurrence.

But at last the bridge was completed, and seemingly the long struggle was over. Not so, however, for one night the piles on which the bridge was placed slid an inch or so, and made it impossible to



open the draw. Vessels were waiting for a passage; and after repeated attempts an axe was procured, and sufficient cut off from the draw to make it possible to open it. The next night it moved again; again was the axe brought into requisition, and it was found necessary to make some extensive alterations before the bridge stood firm.

On the 5th of February, 1827, the City Council had passed a resolve, that, in case the Boston Free Bridge Corporation should build a bridge, such as the City Council should direct and approve, and should locate it to the satisfaction of said Council, it would be expedient for the City to accept the same, and to assume the care and obligation of keeping said bridge in repair, and to provide for lighting the same, and for raising the draw or draws thereof, as long as South Boston should remain a part of the City of Boston, upon such terms and conditions as should be required by the City Council. On the 11th of August, 1828, a committee was appointed by the City Council, with full power to accept from the Boston Free Bridge Corporation the surrender of the bridge, with its abutments, on the compliance by the Corporation with the terms and conditions prescribed, and to submit all matters in dispute to arbitration. The committee reported, October 7, 1828, that they had submitted the same to the arbitration of Loammi Baldwin, Samuel Hubbard and Willard Phillips, Esqrs., who had made an award; that the requisite deeds had been delivered, on the second of October, and the sum of sixteen hundred and seven dollars paid to the City by the Corporation, upon which delivery and payment, the obligation of the care and superintendence of the bridge and streets devolved upon the City, by force

of said award. The Corporation also gave notice of their election to complete the northerly abutment, and claimed the return of four hundred and seventy-four dollars, according to the award, which was returned accordingly. By the deed of the Corporation, which was executed by Francis J. Oliver, the President, on September 26th, 1828, pursuant to a vote of the Corporation passed September 24th, the Boston Free Bridge Corporation surrendered and conveyed the said bridge and abutments, wharves, &c. to the City of Boston, upon the terms and conditions on which the said City agreed to accept the same, by the resolve of February 5, 1827; and also assigned to the City a deed from Gardiner Greene, dated August 1, 1828, and a deed from John T. Apthorp and others, dated August 21, 1828, and conveyed to the City all the lands and flats, rights and privileges, acquired thereby.

By a subsequent act, the City of Boston is authorized to construct and maintain such wharves or piers, on either or both sides of the Free Bridge, as shall be necessary for the preservation and safety of said bridge, *provided, however*, that the said wharves or piers shall not extend in width from the sides of said bridge more than twenty-five feet. Also, "If any person shall wilfully do any injury or damage to said bridge, said wharves or piers, or shall disturb or hinder the said City in the occupation of said wharves or piers, for the purpose aforesaid, the person so offending shall forfeit and pay, for each offence, a penalty not less than fifty dollars, nor more than one hundred dollars, to the use of the Commonwealth, to be recovered by indictment, or information in any court of competent jurisdiction, and such person so offending shall be further liable to answer

in damages to the City of Boston; *provided*, that nothing in this act shall be construed as intending to impair or affect the lawful rights of any person whatsoever.

“Whenever the wharves or piers erected, or which shall be erected by the authority of the said act, shall be used or improved for any other purpose or purposes than those therein specified, all right and authority to maintain them shall cease, and be void.

“No part of the wharves or piers, which the City of Boston is authorized to construct by virtue of the act last cited, shall be maintained within the distance of forty-five feet of any wharf or pier which shall have been or may hereafter be lawfully constructed by any individual or individuals.”

Much opposition was made to the project of making the bridge city property, but at last all difficulty was amicably settled.

Thus was opened a new avenue between Boston and South Boston. Wearisome days and sleepless nights, hard labor and unceasing exertions, were necessary to effect the desired end, and it was not accomplished until twenty-five years had elapsed from the time that the first movement was made in the matter. In 1832, after the affairs of the company had been duly audited, it was found that \$2,431 13 remained to be divided among those who loaned to the company, or about 41 per cent. on the whole loan. We have seen a list of all who contributed to the bridge, and find on it the names of nearly all those who were citizens of South Boston at that time.

On the 12th of March, 1830, an act was passed by the Legislature repealing the provision for a payment to vessels passing the South Bridge draw. On

the 23d of June, 1831, after the North Bridge had been built, and the South Bridge had been greatly diminished in value in consequence thereof, an act was passed, authorizing and empowering the proprietors of the South Bridge to sell, assign and transfer to the City of Boston, the franchise and materials of said Bridge, to have and to hold the same to the City and its successors forever.

Provisions were made, however, that no toll or duty should be exacted or paid for any travel over said bridge, or passing the draw of the same, and that the City should keep the bridge in repair, and provide a keeper who should raise the draw, and afford all necessary and proper accommodation to vessels that might have occasion to pass. Also, the City was to keep the bridge sufficiently lighted.

In case the City did not buy the bridge before the 13th of September, 1831, authority was given the proprietors to surrender the franchise to the Commonwealth.

The City and the proprietors could not come to an agreement; and on the 16th of March, 1832, an additional act was passed, by which the proprietors of the South Bridge were authorized to discontinue said Bridge as a pass way, at any time between the passage of this act and the 1st day of August, 1832, if the City should not, before the 1st day of May, pay to the proprietors such a sum of money as might be agreed upon by them and the City.

Matters did not wear a very favorable aspect; and as the proprietors of the bridge seemed resolved to take advantage of the privilege granted them, the joint Committee of the City Council on the subject was authorized, on the 12th of March, 1832, to agree with the proprietors for the purchase of their fran-

chise. On the 2d of April, they made their report, that the proprietors were willing to sell for a sum not less than thirty-five hundred dollars, and recommended that the offer be accepted.

On the 19th of April, 1832, a deed was executed for the sum of \$3500, conveying to the City of Boston and its successors, "all the franchise and also all the materials of the Boston South Bridge, together with the buildings, rights, wharves and real estate of the said Corporation, and every part and parcel thereof, whatsoever the same may be, and wheresoever situated, with all the privileges, appurtenances, and immunities of every description to the granted premises and every part thereof in any wise appertaining, subject nevertheless always to all the provisos, terms, duties, conditions and tenure in the aforesaid acts of the said Commonwealth set forth and expressed."

Thus the South Bridge became city property, and was made a free passage way for the public. In 1849, an order was passed for the filling up with gravel of about two hundred feet on the South Boston extremity of the Bridge. This was accomplished in 1850, and is now solid earth. It is highly probable that before many years the same process will be undergone at the other extremity, and the bridge only extend sufficiently far to have a passable channel for vessels.

In 1856, the North Bridge having become badly worn, appropriations were made by the City of Boston for a thorough rebuilding. Three months were occupied in the work, which was concluded on the 12th of December. The bridge is now one of the most substantial and best constructed in the vicinity of Boston. It is hereafter to be known as the Fed-

eral Street Bridge, and the South one is to be called the Dover Street Bridge.

### *Old Colony Rail-Road Bridge.*

The act of incorporation of the Old Colony Rail Road, obtained in 1844, provided that the road should terminate in South Boston. This terminus, however, did not suit the Corporation, and in 1845 they petitioned for leave to construct a bridge across the water, and to have a passenger depot on the Boston side. This measure was strongly opposed both by the citizens of Roxbury, who were fearful that it would injure the navigation to their wharves, and by the South Boston people, who were anxious to retain the business which a rail-road depot would probably attract.

The opposition, however, was in vain, and in 1845 the bill authorizing the building of a bridge was passed. The new avenue was built sufficiently wide for two tracks, and provided with a sliding draw. The length of the bridge is 290 feet. Since its completion, the depot on Dorchester Avenue, South Boston, which was before used as a passenger station, has been used only for freight. The cost of the bridge was \$14,000. The width of the draw is 32 feet.

### *Evans's Rail-Road Bridge.*

In 1848, the City Government, desirous of filling up a large number of acres of flats at the South End, made a contract with William Evans, Esq., to supply the gravel requisite. To accomplish the desired end, it was necessary to construct a bridge across from Boston, near Roxbury, to South Boston. Under the name of the Mt. Hope Rail Road, leave was obtained

to build this bridge. It is a pile bridge, running from the rail-road crossing at Turnpike street (now Dorchester Avenue) in South Boston, across in a south-westerly direction. It was nearly a mile in length, not floored, and had two draws for the passage of vessels. In 1856 this bridge was removed, the purpose for which it was built having been accomplished.

*Boston & New York Central Rail-Road Bridges.*

This Company, having located their Depot or Station-house at the foot of Summer street in Boston, and the track of their road lying through a portion of South Boston, it became necessary to construct a bridge for the use of the road, across the water, between the two shores. This was done, not in a straight line across, but in a circular course, from the wharf of the Company in Boston to Slane's wharf in South Boston, making a distance of 4700 feet, and built for a double track. It is a pile bridge, and has a draw of improved construction where the channel passes under it. As the line of the rail-road from South Boston to Dorchester lay across the South or Roxbury Bay, another bridge was here required, passing from Dorchester Avenue to the upland in the town of Dorchester. This is 5030 feet long, and is built mostly for a single track. The total length of the two bridges is 9730 feet, or about  $1\frac{3}{4}$  miles; the cost was \$91,500—and they were opened for the use of the road in January, 1855.

This rail-road passing under the streets in South Boston, bridges were also required at the different crossings. These were for a considerable time unfinished, on account of the pecuniary embarrassments of the Company, and the necessary excavations for

the road are in some places still (1857) remaining without the proper stone embankments.

*Mount Washington Avenue.*

The avenue under this name, leading from the foot of Kneeland street in Boston, over Boston Wharf to the foot of A street in South Boston, and making the third public passage way between these two parts of the city, was finished and opened to the public in 1855. It was built by the Boston Wharf Company, and is a continuation of their wharf, which extended into the sea from the South Boston shore to the Commissioners' line, so called. The City paid the Company \$60,000 for the bridge and a street leading from it to 1st street, and opened it as a public highway. The distance over it, from Broadway to Kneeland street, is somewhat greater than over the Federal Street Bridge. It has one draw for the passage of vessels.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### WAR WITH ENGLAND—PUBLIC EXECUTION.

ON the 17th day of June, 1812, a bill declaring war between the United States and England passed the American House of Representatives by a vote of 79 to 49, and the Senate by one of 19 to 13. On the 18th, President Madison signed the bill, and war was commenced between two of the most powerful nations of the globe.

Immediately after the declaration, the President called on the various States for troops, and volunteers began to gather under the stars and stripes,



to fight for the honor of their country. There was, however, difficulty in obtaining the requisite number, as a portion of the people of the United States thought the war wholly unnecessary. In Massachusetts, during the latter part of the war, Governor Strong issued a proclamation for troops, and the militia gathered from the vicinity in great numbers at Boston, as it was feared the British might attack that town. The United States troops were stationed at the forts on the islands, and were enlisted for the war. The State militia, however, were enlisted for only thirty days.

It was thought best to fortify Dorchester Heights, and as the embankments had been partially washed away, it was deemed expedient to repair the works. This labor was done by volunteers. Patriotic citizens united in the work, and in several instances the male members of a church, headed by their minister and accompanied with martial music, contributed a day's labor to accomplish the object. A new powder-house was erected, and platforms built within the forts, on which were placed a number of cannon ready for action whenever they might be needed.

Several regiments of militia were stationed in South Boston, and for some time our peninsula presented the appearance of a military camp. Wooden barracks were erected on a large field now lying north of Broadway, and between D and Dorchester streets. There were then no houses in that vicinity, and on the spacious field near the barracks the militia were drilled, every morning and evening, in the manual of arms. Guards were stationed day and night upon the beach from South Boston to Commercial Point, in Dorchester, and no one was allowed to leave the peninsula during the night. A lady, who

at that time was but a small child, informs us that one evening a man was badly scalded, and it was necessary to visit Boston in order to procure some lint to dress his burns. She, with another girl, was sent on the errand, but was stopped by the guards, and only allowed to pass after a long examination into the facts of the case.

In the barracks, at the corner of Broadway and A street, Capt. McNeil opened a United States Recruiting Rendezvous. Here the troops, as soon as they were enlisted, were brought and quartered till they were ordered to other parts of the country.

The Massachusetts militia did not enter the service of the United States; that is, they did not put themselves under the command of a United States Officer, but were commanded by militia officers appointed by the State, and were paid from its treasury. By this means they were not required to leave the State. The soldiers received their pay from the State government, and were always paid off in gold and silver, while the regular United States troops received checkered paper money, which was then at a discount of 25 per cent. As is well known, Massachusetts since the war has endeavored to obtain from the general government the amount she paid for her defence, but it has never been received in full.

Each soldier daily drew a certain quantity of provisions sufficient for his wants. Those stationed in South Boston, however, were in the habit of stealing from the few inhabitants then residing here, pigs, sheep, fowls, potatoes, turnips, and, in a word, every thing they could obtain. At one time, as we are informed by a gentleman who was present and heard the conversation, a soldier met one of his companions in

arms, and asked him what he had for breakfast. "Nothing but corn beef and bread," replied the soldier.

"Well, I had something better than that, I reckon."

"What was it?"

"Why, new potatoes."

As new potatoes were then very scarce, the soldier immediately asked where they were obtained.

"Oh, I drew them."

"Drew them! how's that? I did not."

"Oh, I drew them, *tops and all*, down there," pointing as he spoke to a large potato field near the camp.

"You did, did you, you scoundrel!" cried the owner, who chanced to be within hearing. "You did, did you? Well, you may have what you've got, but try that game again, and you'll get paid for it."

And thus it was. The militia seemed to have forgotten that property should be inviolable, and thought that because they were fighting for their country they had a right to take what they pleased.

Although there was no attack made on Boston, yet the inhabitants were in constant fear of an invasion, and the militia were expecting every day to be called on to repel it. Several times the whole camp was thrown into the most intense excitement by receiving notice that the British fleet was coming up the harbor. A watch was constantly stationed on the Heights, to ascertain the movements of the enemy, whose ships of war were for a time in sight.

One evening, it was very cloudy, and the sentinels discovered six or eight large vessels entering the harbor. The alarm was immediately given, and after due examination the commander of the forts on the islands in the harbor decided that they must be British vessels, and accordingly began to make pre-

parations to oppose the enemy. Capt. F. was commander of one fort, but he possessed little valor, and as soon as he saw the enemy as he supposed, coming towards the fort, he began to tremble. His wife and sister, together with all his valuables, were moved from the fort to South Boston for safety, and he himself was so overcome with fear, that one of the officers, Colonel, afterwards General Porter, a man who feared nothing, came up to him, and said,

“Captain, carry your wife and sister out of this fort. We don’t want any wincing and blubbering here. Clear every one of them out, and if you are afraid, clear out yourself, and I’ll see to the fort. We don’t want any scare-crows in it.”

In due time the clouds dispersed, and instead of the British fleet, the soldiers discovered only a portion of the American squadron giving chase to a British frigate. Of course Capt. F. felt rather ashamed.

At another time, the officers of the militia, it is said, desirous of trying the bravery of the soldiers quartered in South Boston, one night caused to be stationed a large number of boats in the harbor, placing on each one a blue light. At about midnight, the drum beat to arms, and the astonished militia, half dressed and but half awake, saw before them, as they supposed, the British fleet just ready to fire upon them. As soon as they could be formed into columns, the roll was called, when it was found that one third of the men had deserted, and had scampered off, as fast as their legs would permit, to Dorchester. After waiting in suspense for some time, the officers remarked that they thought there would be no trouble before morning, and ordered the men into their quarters.

After several months' service at this place, peace was declared, the troops returned to their homes, and South Boston was no longer the scene of military operations.

### *Execution.*

The following account of an execution which took place in South Boston, will be read with interest.

In the latter part of the year 1813, two men, named Samuel Tully and John Dalton, were convicted of piracy and sentenced to be hung. Accordingly, on the 10th day of December, of that year, the two men were taken from the Prison at Charlestown, and a procession was formed as follows:—First, the Deputy Marshal on horseback, bearing the Marshal's mace, a silver oar. Next came carriages containing the officers of the State Prison, and the Marshal and Sheriff of Suffolk county. Then came the criminals in the Prison carriage, a wagon hung in black, attended by Rev. Mr. Collier, Chaplain of the Prison. They were pinioned, and wore white caps. Their coffins projected from each side of the carriage. Following behind were Deputy Marshals and an immense crowd of men, women and children, eager to witness the death-struggles of a human being. In this manner they passed through the town, Tully repeatedly addressing those who crowded about the carriage. Crossing the Old bridge, they passed up Fourth street, to the gallows, which was built at the foot of Nook Hill, now the corner of C and Third streets. On arriving at the place of execution, the Marshal and his Deputies, and the Sheriff and the Chaplain, ascended the stage. Tully then read a written communication, in which he confessed that he had been guilty of piracy. He also spoke feelingly of the great kindness and attention he had re-

ceived in prison. The criminals then kneeled, and amidst the tumult of the immense crowd who surrounded the place of execution, Rev. Mr. Collier addressed the Throne of Grace. He then took the culprits by the hand, and bade them farewell. At quarter past 2, Tully mounted the drop, and letting fall a handkerchief (the signal that he was ready), the drop fell, and he was launched into eternity without a struggle, the limbs merely undergoing a slight contraction and extension.

The Marshal then made a suitable address to the immense gathering, and concluded by reading a respite for Dalton, by which the President deferred his execution till the 10th of January, 1814. He was, however, eventually sentenced to imprisonment for life. The halter was then taken from his neck, a hat placed on his head instead of the white cap, and he was transported back to the prison with the body of Tully, in the same carriage in which they had been taken to the gallows. No less than ten thousand spectators were present, and a much larger number would have attended if the weather had not been so intensely cold. So cold, indeed, was it, that several were frost-bitten. The place of execution was exposed to a sharp piercing wind from the ocean, and rendered it very uncomfortable for the spectators to stand any length of time. Every thing was conducted with propriety and decorum, and the arrangements of the day reflected the greatest credit on the Marshal. The following stanza was sung with a clear voice, by Tully, upon the scaffold, a few moments before the drop fell:—

“ All hail, my dear companions, all hail to you again !  
You wish to know my station, if I am free from pain.  
I'm free from pain and sorrow, and every earthly wo,  
And happy in my Saviour whence all my blessings flow.”

## CHAPTER XI.

## SCHOOLS AND SCHOOL-HOUSES.

AMONG the many advantages which South Boston has derived from its union with the City proper, there is none which has produced so great an effect as the increase of opportunities for acquiring education. The inhabitants of Dorchester Neck were almost forgotten by the Town of Dorchester in its annual appropriations for schools, and they were obliged to support a school at their own expense. We find the following on the Records of the Town of Dorchester: "At a meeting of the Freeholders of Dorchester, held the 18th day of May, 1761, It was voted, that four £ be allowed Dorchester Neck towards the support of a school." The amount was afterwards increased, as will be seen from the annexed vote. At a meeting of the Freeholders of the Town of Dorchester, held May 12th, 1794, it was voted, "That six £ be allowed the Inhabitants of Dorchester Neck towards the support of a school." As may be supposed, this sum was not sufficient to sustain a school for any great portion of the year. Still, the inhabitants of the Neck were obliged to get along as best they could, with this trifling assistance.

In 1804, as we have before remarked, Dorchester Neck was annexed to Boston, and the inhabitants were now dependent on that town for the support of their school. The town of Boston, however, did not immediately make an appropriation for this purpose, and the young South Bostonians were still obliged to attend a private school, which was supported by subscription. We can obtain no informa-

tion in regard to this school, save that it was far from answering the wishes of those for whom it was designed. In 1807, however, the inhabitants of South Boston, thinking they were entitled to the same privileges as those in other parts of the town, requested the School Committee to provide a suitable school for the instruction of their children. On the 22d of May, 1807, a petition, reading as follows, was presented to the School Committee by a number of the inhabitants of South Boston.

“To the Honorable Selectmen of the town of Boston and School Committee, the inhabitants of South Boston humbly show, that for three years past they have paid a tax to the amount of nearly one thousand dollars per annum to the said Town, without any allowance for schooling or any other expenses they have been at, since the annexation of this peninsula to the metropolis; therefore they pray your honorable board to insert an article in your warrant for the next Town meeting, requesting the town to allow and pay a sum of money to our committee for the support of a woman’s school, and the rent of a room for that purpose, for six months. Also, from the next tax a sum of money sufficient to build a convenient School House, and the support of a Schoolmaster for one year. As in duty bound, we shall ever pray.

JOSEPH WOODWARD,	} <i>Committee</i>	
ABRAHAM GOULD,		} <i>in behalf of the</i>
JOHN DELUCE,		

*South Boston, April 30th, 1807.”*

This petition received no attention from the School Committee, excepting the passage of an order that all future consideration of the subject be indefinitely postponed.



The inhabitants of the town, however, did not treat the subject so carelessly, and voted to grant \$300 for the support of a school for one year. This was not sufficient to pay all expenses, but what was wanting was cheerfully paid by the citizens of South Boston. A school-house, capable of seating about 90 scholars, was built, and the school was placed under the charge of a woman. Its location was on the south side of G street, the *yard* making the corner of G and Dorchester streets.

The School Committee did not take this school under their charge till 1811, at which time the inhabitants presented another petition, and "At a legal meeting of the Freeholders and other Inhabitants of the Town of Boston, held on the 27th day of May, 1811, it was voted, That the Petition of the inhabitants of South Boston respecting schooling their children be referred to the School Committee, who are hereby requested to pay an immediate attention to the same, and to take the school under their care and supervision." The Committee then appropriated three hundred dollars for the support of a school for one year, and also took the school under their charge.

On June 28th, 1816, a petition signed by Adam Bent, John Deluce, and Abel Hewins, a committee of the inhabitants of South Boston, was presented to the School Committee, praying for an additional grant, and the following order was passed:

"Voted, that an additional grant of \$100 be made for the present year, making the whole grant \$400, and also, a grant be made of five cords of wood."

Of this early school, a gentleman now resident among us, and who attended it, gives the following account.

"I commenced going to that school some time during the war of 1812—as it is called—while the whole neighborhood of the school-house was an entire camp; and the whole locality and interior arrangement of the building are as vivid in my recollection now as are those of any room in my house. A long desk ran lengthwise in the building: this was the seat of the first and second classes of boys. All who occupied it were compelled to climb over the bench to take a seat, the plank which formed the seat running the whole length of the building, with the exception of some five feet at the west end of it, which was occupied by the master's desk, and this was elevated about three feet. This long desk, as I have said, ran from east to west on the south side of the house, and some shorter desks and benches ran crosswise the building, from north to south, leaving an aisle of about four feet the whole length of the building, in the centre of which stood a stove. There was a fire-place in the west end of the building, which, when I first went to the school, was the only apparatus for warming it, but it was found difficult to do this in extreme cold weather, and hence the getting of the stove. There was a great descent on G street then, as now, and while the east end of the house was on the ground, the west end was blocked up with stone perhaps three feet or more. There were no windows in either end of the building, and the east end was used by the boys for playing marbles, ball, and other games. Thirty or forty feet from the east end of the school-house stood the public pound.

"These short cross-seats and desks of which I have spoken, were occupied by the girls of the school, and by the boys of the under classes. The first class of

girls was at the extreme end of the room, farthest from the master's desk, and boys of the lower classes in front of them.

"The desks of the higher classes of girls had conveniences for writing, and I distinctly remember distributing the writing-books to the girls occupying those seats. The long desk had shelves under it for the storage of books, &c. Most of the pupils, living at a distance from the school, in winter carried their dinners, which were generally deposited on those shelves, and occasionally some hungry urchin would make free with his neighbor's viands, while the despoiled would make reprisals upon the provisions of *his* neighbor. The bench or plank on which the occupants of this desk sat, had no paling of any kind either in front or rear, but was entirely naked, giving a fair view to those occupying the cross seats of all that was going on under and around the long desk.

"I well remember one winter, after an extremely copious fall of snow, succeeded by a slight rain and vigorous frost, which left the surface of the snow as smooth and nearly as hard as ice, the boys were enabled to skate to school, elevated to nearly the tops of the fences, which were about the only obstructions, there being but few houses in the place. Most of the boys availed themselves of this novel method of travelling over the pastures (for there were no streets), and, as might be expected, when school was out there was great rivalry to see who could get on his skates first and be off. One day I conceived the plan of putting on my skates before the school was dismissed, expecting to pass out in the crowd unnoticed by the master. Accordingly, I got under the desk and tackled on my skates, unnoticed indeed

by the master, but observed by one of the girls on the cross seats, who made some kind of a telegraphic signal to him, and when I emerged from under *my* desk, I was invited to visit *his*, which I was rather reluctant to do. However, I was compelled to submit, and, all *skated* as I was, forced to perambulate the room, to the no small merriment of the boys upon whom I had been attempting to steal a march. The old building is still extant, being, I believe, the one at the *old entrance*, on Fourth street, to the institutions at the Point."

The first master of the school was Zephaniah Wood, of Lunenburg. In May, 1811, when the Committee first took the school under their charge, this gentleman, then but about twenty years of age, was appointed teacher. The religious society, which was afterwards incorporated as the Hawes Place Congregational Society, was then without a minister, and as Mr. Wood was of a serious and studious turn of mind, he engaged to preach to them, without any other compensation than the sum of \$300 which he received for teaching school. Mr. Wood was universally loved and respected by all with whom he was associated, and his untimely death, on the 26th of October, 1822, was a source of the greatest lamentation both to the church over which he officiated and to his numerous relatives and friends. He left a widow and several young children in the deepest affliction. Immediately after his decease, Rev. Lemuel Capen, of Dorchester, was appointed to take charge of the school, and entered upon the duties of his office Nov. 21st, 1822. Previous to this, at a meeting of the Committee, held June 14, 1819, it was "Voted,—That two medals be given annually to the Boy who most excels in Reading and Writing in

the School at South Boston." The names of the first medal scholars are not known, as they were not recorded.

At a meeting of the School Committee held Feb. 18, 1818, it was voted, that the master of the school in South Boston be put, in point of salary, upon the same footing as the Ushers of the other Public Schools.

At a meeting of the School Committee, held March 15, 1819, it was voted that the Committee of the South School visit the school in South Boston, and hire a carriage for that purpose.

In 1821, there arose some trouble in regard to the ownership of the school-house which had been built in South Boston, and a committee was chosen to inquire into the tenure by which it was held. On Feb. 27th, this committee reported, and as their report gives a little of the history of the school in this place, we present parts of it.

"The Sub-committee appointed to inquire by what tenure the school-house at South Boston is held, and what right the Town has therein, respectfully ask leave to report,—That they have taken the subject into consideration; that in consequence of the loss of the records of this Committee embracing the period of time at which said school-house was built, they have been unable to ascertain from the best authority what votes were passed relative to the subject. Your Committee, however, have since their appointment visited the school in South Boston, and from conversation with some of the citizens of that part of the Town, and particularly with Mr. Woodward, who appears to have had the principal agency in the transaction, they have ascertained the following particulars:—

"That about three or four years after the annexation to this town of that part of Dorchester, an application was made by several of the inhabitants to the School Committee for aid in supporting a school at that part of the town: the inhabitants having previously made some exertions to establish a private school there. The School Committee therefore voted an appropriation of three hundred dollars annually for this object, and authorized a person, agreed upon by the inhabitants, to receive the money and apply it, under the direction of a committee of the inhabitants of South Boston. Mr. Woodward contracted with a Mr. Everett, and the house was built at an expense of four hundred dollars. Before the house was paid for, however, it is stated that the inhabitants of South Boston, by voluntary subscription, raised forty or fifty dollars to help out the compensation of the master and keep him contented. The appropriation was afterwards raised to \$350, and then to \$400, and it is now six hundred dollars, placing the Master upon the same footing with the Ushers of the other public schools."

Upon the ground of aiding in building the school-house, certain persons attempted to get possession of it, to be used as a place of worship. The Committee, however, ruled against these persons, and the right of the Town to the school-house was established.

About the same time, also, the citizens of South Boston began to feel the need of having a new school-house, and accordingly, on the 24th of April, 1821, a petition to this effect was presented and referred to the Sub-Committee of the Franklin School. As is usual in such cases, the subject was for a long time

under deliberation, and it was not till the 20th of February following that it was

“Voted,—That the School Committee are of the opinion that it is expedient that a new school-house be built in that part of the city called South Boston, and also that the said school-house should consist of at least two rooms, each sufficient to accommodate 150 scholars.” A site was selected, and the brick edifice known as the Hawes School-house, and situated on Broadway, between F and Dorchester streets, was built. One room only was fitted up, the school being then so small that the whole building was not needed to accommodate the pupils.

In the fall of 1823, the building was ready for use, and the pupils, under the direction of Mr. Capen, marched in a procession to the new house, and were appropriately addressed by the Rev. Mr. Pierpont.

We find the following in the records of the School Committee:—

“Sept. 7, 1824. Noah Brooks petitioned for the use of the room of the new school-house for a singing-school.” This petition was granted, and there are many now resident in South Boston who can well remember the singing-school held in the Hawes School-house.

In 1826, Mr. Capen resigned his office as master, and was succeeded, on the 5th of September, by Barnum Field, afterwards master of the Franklin School. Mr. Field remained here till 1829, when he was succeeded by Jairus Lincoln. In 1827 we find the school first mentioned as the Hawes School, although that name was not fully established till 1830, as we find it mentioned as the South Boston School several times afterwards in the Records of the School Committee.

On the 4th of September, 1829, it was Voted, that the salary of the Master of the Hawes School be \$1,000; and in 1833, the master of this school was made equal to the masters of the other Grammar Schools.

Mr. Lincoln continued master but a few months, as he found it impossible to control the waywardness of the scholars, and on the 9th of February, 1830, he was succeeded by Mark Anthony DeWolf Howe, who was quite a young man and of small stature, but he had few equals in efficiency, either as a disciplinarian or instructor. If he had continued in the Boston schools, as he had serious thoughts of doing, he would now probably have been second to none of our most distinguished masters. He left the Hawes School to take a tutorship in Brown University, at Providence, R. I., of which he was a most honored graduate. He had become greatly attached to the school, and was then, as ever since, most deeply interested in the elevation of our Common Schools. He is now one of the most respectable and influential ministers of the Episcopal Church, in the City of Philadelphia.

Mr. Howe resigned February 8th, 1831, when Mr. William P. Page was chosen master. During the time Mr. Page was in office the previous troubles were greatly increased. The master was wanting in efficiency, and had little tact for discipline or government. Truancy was very common, and the boys and girls were perfectly lawless. At length, on the 14th of August, 1832, Mr. Page was obliged to resign, and was succeeded by Mr. Moses W. Walker, who entered on the duties of his office on the 28th of August. Mr. Walker was well aware of the state of the school, and was determined to quell the rebel-



lions spirit of the scholars. Accordingly, he entered school, and commenced his labors with a whipping affair, which caused great excitement.

From the Records of the School Committee, we make several extracts relating to this matter, thinking it may interest those who would like to know of the discipline of our first school.

It appears that Mr. Leonard Harrington, the father of the boy who was flogged, presented a complaint to the Committee that his son was cruelly beaten and wounded by Mr. Moses W. Walker, master of the Hawes School, South Boston, "for no such misconduct on the part of the boy as would have justified the infliction of even moderate chastisement, much less the aggravated whipping he received." He asked an investigation of the subject, and an opportunity to be heard before the Committee, that if the charges against the master were sustained, he might obtain redress.

To this the master made a long reply, from which we give extracts.

He first remarks that, previous to entering the Hawes School, he had learned that it was in a bad condition; that the boys had in one instance physically opposed the master, and that the girls had struck the teacher. He then goes on to give an account of his first half day in school.

"I found the scholars collected, and in great disorder. I took the chair, stamped loudly upon the floor, and called the school to order. And here for the first time Harrington attracted my attention, by continuing his talk and laughter. I again enjoined silence, directing my remarks particularly to Harrington, after which the house was still. I then said, 'Hear me. I see many things which I do not like,

and which must not be continued. I am about to command you to do some few things, and I shall speak but once. Be careful to obey me promptly, as a failure in this respect will expose you to certain punishment.' Seeing a great part of the scholars supporting their heads upon their hands, with elbows upon their desks, I said to them, 'The first thing which you are to do, is to take your elbows from those desks.' This was instantly done by all except Harrington, to whom I again addressed myself, in a manner which left no room for his mistaking my meaning. Upon this he removed his elbows from his desk, but assumed a smile in which I read his character. The children were then told to fold their arms, and to remain in that position until further orders. This was done; but I now observed that Harrington and two or three in his immediate vicinity were casting looks at each other and laughing. They were ordered to take those smiles from their faces;—whereupon Harrington removed his arms from the position in which he had just been commanded to hold them, placed his elbows on the desk, his hands before his face, and continued laughing and looking from behind his hands at the boys about him.

"After this third exhibition of his indifference to my commands, I thought it necessary to make an example of him. Accordingly I called him to my desk and bade him place his hands upon the floor, which after a little hesitation he did. I then struck him upon his posteriors three blows with a rattan, bade him stand up, and inquired of him if he was disposed to do what I commanded. He made no reply, but stood shaking his head. He was ordered to place himself in the same position again. This he refused to do, but was assisted by my left hand, while with

the right I inflicted about the same number of blows as before. He was again told to stand up, and asked the same question, to which he muttered, 'yes.' I told him to satisfy me of his sincerity by walking to the farther side of the room lightly upon his toes. He moved off in a most impudently swaggering manner. He was called back, and allowed another opportunity, but not thinking it best to improve it, he was again punished in a similar manner. On being allowed to stand, he was asked if he would obey me, to which he very promptly replied that he would. He was called on for the same evidence of his disposition as before, which he gave to my satisfaction. I then bade him lie down upon his back, and get up, which he did. This last he was called on to repeat, which being done to my acceptance, he was allowed to take his seat."

The whole subject was referred to a Special Committee appointed by the School Committee, and after hearing both parties, and listening to the evidence of several of the pupils present, together with the opinion of a physician who was called to examine the wounds, it was decided that as the master was not in anger at the time, but appeared perfectly cool, and as the wounds were not of a nature to cause the supposition that the boy was inhumanly or cruelly punished, therefore Mr. Harrington had leave to withdraw. Mr. Walker was thus upheld in his first attempt to subdue the insubordinate spirit of the young South Bostonians, and he continued his attempts till it appears he had whipped enough to secure the obedience of the scholars. His course, however, did not meet the approval of the parents, who thought him too severe in his treatment of their children, and on the 14th of January, 1834, he re-

signed his office, and Joseph Harrington, Jr., was chosen to take his place.

On the 27th of March, it was voted to fit up the upper story of the new school house, and also to supply the school with new desks. This measure was rendered necessary by the rapid increase of scholars.

As soon as Mr. Harrington assumed the duties of his office, a great change was observed. His policy was altogether different from that of Mr. Walker, and its good effects were immediately felt. Instead of using the rod for every little offence, he attempted to subdue the scholars by appealing to their sense of right and wrong. Did a boy break a rule of the school, instead of calling him to his desk and giving him a whipping, he allowed him an opportunity to reflect on his conduct, and strove to convince him of the guilt of his behavior. He endeavored to show that he had an interest in the welfaré of his pupils, and did not punish them out of revenge. He was in the habit of joining with the boys in their sports, and was always ready to perform anything which would conduce to their happiness. Often he proposed excursions to the country, or visits to exhibitions, and his mind seemed unceasingly occupied in devising plans to secure not only the love and esteem of his pupils, but also their advancement in a moral point of view. In school he was strict, and yet kind. A perfect lesson was required if a boy would meet his approval, and the pupils were urged to study from a desire to please him. He invented the *positions* which are now in use in nearly every school in New England, and adopted such rules in regard to truancy that the boys were seldom or never absent from school unless obliged to remain at home.

*Hawes Juvenile Association.*

Mr. Harrington was the founder of the HAWES JUVENILE ASSOCIATION, a society whose influence was most beneficial on the youth of South Boston, and whose effects are still felt in our community. This association was the first of the kind known, and although hundreds have since been formed, South Boston has the honor of giving birth to the first, and Mr. Harrington has the enviable distinction of being the founder of an institution which has had great influence upon the moral character of our schools.

The following letter from Mr. Harrington gives an excellent account of the Association and its objects, and will be read with interest by those who have participated in its benefits.

*"Hartford, Nov. 26th, 1849.*

"DEAR SIR,—Trusting that you will excuse what must be a somewhat hurried communication, I will say whatever occurs to me touching the formation of the 'Hawes Juvenile Association.'

"Profane swearing had always seemed to me a most useless, as well as a criminal habit—a habit that was likely to leave an unfavorable moral impress upon character, yet which was not the result of any great depravity of character.

"General moral inculcations, or specific precepts, would have their effect in lessening this evil in a school; but that which springs from thoughtlessness, and from corrupt example, and which has come to be rather an external habit, than the expression of radical viciousness, needs *external* agencies, perpetual reminders, the constraint of favorable circumstances, to subdue it—and in most cases such agencies will, in youth, correct the habit.

"Such an external constraint I determined to organize in the Hawes School. Yet not external, only, did I anticipate such an organization would be. I trusted that it would quicken the moral sentiment of the school, and that, by bringing an actual reinforcement to individual virtue, as well as by its constant attrition against a superficial habit, it would effect a great change in respect to profaneness.

"Having matured my plan, and having prepared the boys for a solemn consideration of the subject, I one day requested all who did not use profane language, nor any thing that approached to it, to rise. There was a mingled expression of curiosity, interest, almost of alarm, in the school, as the request was made. Some fifteen or twenty boys, out of near two hundred, if I recollect aright, stood up.

"These constituted the pure nucleus for the proposed Association. I opened my plans. They were received with apparent approval and pleasure. We had meetings; a constitution was formed; a name was adopted; officers were chosen, and a Library was set on foot.

"The association had privileges. It was of course honored by the teachers of the school. Its influence was soon manifest to a most gratifying degree. The practice which it was instituted to suppress, fell at once into condemnation, and was gradually banished from the school—not that it was ever entirely extirpated in individuals; but I think it may be said that a spirit hostile to the practice pervaded the school—and under such circumstances, a vice whose foundation is deeper than habit must fall.

"The Association, before many months, numbered, I should think, half or two-thirds of the school.

"Parents cordially approved the movement, and

it is my conviction that its good results were extended into *homes*, acting upon others than the pupils of the school. How could it be otherwise?

"When children should come home, and speak of the Association and its objects, of their own participation in its privileges, of the necessity of guardianship over their tongues, of the forfeiture of membership by any indulgence in the habit of swearing, how could it be otherwise, than that parents, or brothers, or even friends, should be led to *think*, and to forbear a habit of whose folly and sin they would be thus incessantly yet unobtrusively reminded?

"It was a special object with members of the Association to dissuade those whom they heard using profane language, from perseverance in the habit; and if any who were members were found lapsing, they were admonished by a committee, and, if the case demanded, were suspended, or expelled.

"I made it a point to learn the restrictive power of the Association; and for this purpose lent an ear to the conversation of the boys, in their sports. Occasionally I have stood concealed, of moonlight nights, where I could overhear their language when they were gathered, in large numbers, at play; but it is my impression that, on these occasions, I never heard from one of my own boys a profane word.

"The influence of the Association seems to have been acknowledged by strangers. A distinguished gentleman of Boston, riding for his health to South Boston Point, was obliged of course to pass the school-house, which he often did at times when the boys were out at recess, or at play near the building. It seems that their decorous behavior, and their freedom from objectionable language, attracted his attention. He stopped and made some inquiry as to the cause of

such striking and agreeable results. Having learned it, he, with a very kind letter, enclosed anonymously FIFTY DOLLARS, for the benefit of the Library of the Association.

"It is of course easy to see that the same influences that would guard a boy from profane swearing, would also shield him from indecencies of expression. That this was the case, I was fully convinced.

"The Association held regular meetings. I myself was a member. The affairs of the society were administered by proper officers and committees. It was one object to familiarize the members with parliamentary forms, in their debates and transactions of business.

"You ask me to speak of the exhibitions of the Association. They were occasions of deep and universal interest. I think they occurred semi-annually. Original addresses and poems were spoken at them; or perhaps some short drama, written to illustrate the evils of profaneness, was acted. The exercises were interspersed with music.

"Delegations from similar societies in adjacent towns, with their badges, &c., were often present, and contributed greatly to the interest of the occasions.

"It is not to be denied that to sustain a constant interest in the Association, and to preserve it as a living agent of moral influence, required no little sacrifice of time, and no slight exercise of ingenuity. But if there is one act of my life which in the remembrance gives me satisfaction, it is that of the establishment of the 'Hawes Juvenile Association.'

"I have of late years met but few of the young men (then boys) who were connected with the Association, but it would be pleasant to hear their testi-



mony respecting its value. Perhaps I overrate its *permanent* usefulness.

"As I have, in obedience to your request, run through this general sketch, the old scenes which it describes have arisen vividly to view. My relations to teachers and pupils have been revived, and I cannot but hope that they, in some measure, participate with me in pleasant remembrances of the period when we were all connected in labor and duty.

Truly yours, JOS. HARRINGTON."

To show more fully the design of the "Hawes Juvenile Association," we here introduce the Preamble.

"We, the undersigned members of the Hawes School, regarding profane swearing as a most pernicious sin, and earnestly desiring to abstain from it ourselves, and to check its progress in others, have resolved to form ourselves into a society for the suppression of profanity, and to be governed by the following regulations, as a Constitution."

The 6th Article of the Constitution defines what swearing was considered by the Association, and therefore we copy it.

"Profane swearing shall be divided into two classes. In the First Class shall be comprehended the use of the name of 'God,' or the 'Saviour,' together with that of 'damn,' or its compounds, and 'hell,' or its compounds. In the Second Class shall be included all other words which may indirectly come under the title of profane, such as 'curse,' 'devil,' and their compounds, of which the society shall judge."

The following is a list of the Original Members of the Association, which is copied from the Records of the Society:—

“Joseph Harrington, Jr., John Alex'r Harris, Elkanah C. Crosby, George A. Stevens, Lewis F. Baker, James Moore, Calvin F. How, Samuel M. Bedlington, William McCarthy, Willis H. Colburn, Benjamin Thacher, E. H. Rogers, F. H. Clapp, Theodore Russell Glover, B. Capen, D. Nickerson, Joseph B. Johnson, Ober Spiller, Lyman G. Bruce, William E. Jenkins, James B. Rogers, Albert H. Blanchard, George T. Thacher, Charles W. Dexter, John W. Whiston, M. E. Day, Warren W. W. Glover, Maxwell Poole, John Burrill, Joseph S. Binney, Nehemiah P. Mann, Rowland E. Jenkins, Richard Faxon, William B. Fairchild, Tho's Hoar, John B. Pope, David W. Osborn, Edward W. Haynes, Richard Seward, Edwin A. Sherman.”

Soon after the society became prosperous, the sins of lying and stealing were added to that of swearing, and any member who was convicted of either of these crimes was expelled.

The Exhibitions to which allusion is made in Mr. Harrington's letter, were of the most interesting nature, and were productive of much good. We have before us the Orders of Exercises of several of them, but too much space would be occupied by copying them.

On the occasion of the Annual Exhibition of the Hawes School, on Wednesday, August 23, 1837, an Original Address was delivered before the Hawes Juvenile Association, by Master George A. Stevens, one of the pupils of the school. This address was printed, and, although the writer was but fourteen years of age, it would do credit to a much more mature mind.

On Wednesday, March 14, 1838, the First Anniversary Celebration of the Association took place.

On this occasion, an address was made by Master William S. Thacher, and original Hymns, written by Misses Irene S. Thacher and Rebecca A. Goodridge, were sung.

On Wednesday, March 13, 1839, the Second Anniversary was celebrated, and so intense was the interest felt by the citizens of South Boston, that the performances were held in the Baptist Church, and consisted of an address by Master Henry W. Alexander, and a Poem by Master Wm. B. Wells. On this occasion an Original Moral Drama, illustrative of the evils of Profaneness, was introduced. This Drama was written by Mr. Harrington, and ten misses and eight lads took part in it.

The Third Anniversary Celebration was held in the Phillips Church, on the 4th of March, 1840; and on Thursday evening, April 21, there was a Grand Juvenile Concert at the same place. The design of this was to raise funds to increase a Library which had been collected by the Association. The tickets of admission were twenty-five cents, and the house was crowded. On this occasion another drama, written by Mr. Harrington, was presented, and was considered so interesting that it was published in book-form.

The interest of this celebration was much enhanced by the attendance of delegations from kindred societies that had sprung up in the surrounding towns, and who came in a body, with appropriate banners and badges.

On the 29th of August, 1834, the Hawes School-House was struck by lightning during a violent thunder shower. The pupils were engaged in studying at the time, and, as may be supposed, were much alarmed. With one impulse they made for the

door, and tumbled heels over heads down stairs,—boys, girls, books, caps and bonnets in one mass. Fortunately no one was seriously injured, although several were somewhat bruised, and all were exceedingly frightened. After the alarm was over, the children were again collected, and Mr. Harrington made an appropriate address, and joined with them in a prayer to Him who had preserved them in time of danger.

The following laughable incident is related:—At the time when the lightning struck, a foreigner was engaged in digging in the vicinity. Half frightened out of his wits, he started on the full run, and met on his way the gentleman for whom he was working.

“What is the matter?” said the gentleman.

“Sure, an’ a ball of fire jest fell down by your house.”

On going towards the school-house, just as he arrived in sight of it, the gentleman saw a large swarm of wasps that had been frightened from their nest on the eaves. Thinking it smoke, he began to cry “Fire! Fire!” and could not for some time be persuaded that he was mistaken.

The next day the scholars were engaged in studying, when a piece of mortar fell between the ceiling and the wall. Although the sky was clear, the children thought the school-house was struck again by lightning, and were again much frightened.

In January, 1838, the School Committee decided to try the experiment of teaching Music in the Grammar Schools, and into the Hawes School was the study first introduced. Mr. Lowell Mason was the first master. The experiment proved successful, and music is now one of the prominent studies in the Grammar Schools. Mr. Johnson was the next

music master, and he was succeeded by Mr. Albert Drake, who is still in office, and by his skill in imparting musical knowledge has become deservedly popular.

On the 1st of July, 1839, Mr. Harrington felt it his duty to resign his situation to prepare himself for the ministry. He left, amidst the mutual regrets of his pupils and the citizens of South Boston. As a testimonial of respect and gratitude, his pupils presented him with a very valuable gift.

Mr. Frederick Crafts was chosen his successor, and retained the office till he was appointed Master of the Bigelow School.

On the 11th of August, 1835, it was voted to have a Writing Master in the Hawes School, with a salary of \$1,000. Mr. John A. Harris was appointed to the office.

On the 17th of January, 1848, it was voted to divide the school into two distinct portions, one to be called the "Hawes School for Boys," and the other the "Hawes School for Girls." This arrangement was continued till the completion of the Bigelow School-House, on Fourth street, when the Hawes School for Girls became the Bigelow School.

In August, 1852, Mr. Harris was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Barrett, the present master.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

### SCHOOLS—CONTINUED.

THE Hawes School may be considered the Parent School in South Boston, as from it have sprung no

less than two new institutions of learning. In May, 1840, the Sub-Committee of the Hawes School, in their Quarterly Report of the condition of the school, stated that there were belonging to it 292 boys and 271 girls—total, 563. The school-house was only capable of seating 468 pupils, and hence nearly a hundred were unprovided with seats. The Committee strongly recommended that a new school be immediately organized. After considerable discussion, an order was passed, authorizing the Committee of the Hawes School to hire a proper room, fit it up, and procure teachers, provided the cost should not exceed \$2,000.

The Committee immediately hired Franklin Hall, at the corner of Turnpike and Fourth streets; and on the first Monday after the June vacation, a portion of the Hawes School, under the charge of Jonathan Battles, Usher in the above-named school, and Miss Lucy Floyd and Miss Lydia S. Brooks, Assistants, were removed to this Hall, and designated the BRANCH SCHOOL. The names of one hundred and seventy-eight pupils are enrolled on the books of this school, as having been removed from the Hawes School.

On November 2, 1840, the Committee reported that the school in Franklin Hall had so increased that it was found necessary to transfer a part of the pupils back to the Hawes School. The Committee also added that the citizens of Ward XII. had a right to expect a new school-house, and in their opinion a new one must be immediately built.

In the early part of 1841, an order was passed authorizing the erection of a new school-house for the Branch School, on a piece of land on Broadway, between B and C streets.

On November 2, 1841, a committee was appointed to report a name for the new school. After some deliberation they proposed that it should be called the "EVERETT SCHOOL." This order was indefinitely postponed.

On January 11, 1842, another committee was appointed for the same purpose, who reported that it should be known as the "LOWELL SCHOOL." This name, however, did not meet with favor, and at last it was ordered that the school be called the MATHER SCHOOL, in honor of Richard Mather, one of the first ministers in Dorchester.

On Thursday, March 3d, 1842, the school-house was finished, and first occupied by the school. At half past 2 in the afternoon, there was an exhibition, at which the pupils were examined in their various studies. Declamations by the boys of the first class also added to the interest of the occasion. The salary of Mr. Battles was increased, and Mr. Isaac F. Shepard was chosen to assist him as Usher, and in May the school was reported as being in a prosperous condition, and numbering 352 pupils. All residing above C street were required to attend the Hawes School, while all below were to be connected with the Mather.

The school continued without being fully organized till August, 1843, when Mr. Josiah A. Stearns, Usher in the Adams School, was appointed Grammar Master, and Mr. Jonathan Battles, Writing Master.

From this time the school seemed to receive a new impulse. It had long labored under many disadvantages arising from the want of a complete organization, but when this was accomplished, it immediately rose to a high rank among its kindred institutions.

In October, 1847, the Hawes School was so crowded, and so large a number attending the Mather School were found to reside in the Hawes district, it was thought best to change the school-districts, and accordingly all pupils residing east of the centre of D street were obliged to attend the Hawes, while all to the west of said street belonged to the Mather.

The first medals were awarded to William B. Fairchild, Francis H. Jenney, Nancy Porter Walton, Sarah Agnes Loring and Elizabeth Brown.

In March, 1854, the school was placed under a single head; Mr. Battles retiring, and Mr. Stearns becoming Principal.

In January, 1856, the name of the school was changed from MATHER to LAWRENCE, in honor of a patron of the School. The school edifice still retains its old name.

The Mather School-House was erected at a cost of \$21,314 80, and is 3 stories high. In the upper story, it had originally a large hall, occupied by the Grammar Department, while beneath it was a room of the same size, used by the Writing Department. Connected with each of these rooms was a recitation-room. On the basement was a large Ward Room, used for public purposes, and also occupied in latter times by a portion of the school. Two rooms for Primary Schools were likewise contained in the building.

In the fall of 1856 the building was re-modelled, so that the entrances are now made at the centre of the sides of the building, into a passage way furnished with stairs giving access to eight Primary School-Rooms on the second and third stories. The first story is occupied in front by the Ward Room, and in the rear by two Primary School-Rooms.



*Lawrence Association.*

The LAWRENCE ASSOCIATION of the Mather School was established in January, 1844. Its objects were similar to those of the Association already mentioned as existing in the Hawes School.

It received its name out of respect to Mr. AMOS LAWRENCE, a part of whose donation of books to the Hawes School now constituted its Library. It was at first conducted solely by the boys; but under their management it soon proved a total failure. It was, however, thoroughly re-organized in the spring of 1846, when some improvements were made, and the Grammar Master was chosen President. Thus firmly founded, the affairs of the society took a new turn. On May 1st, 1846, the Association sent the Preamble and first Article of their Constitution to Mr. Lawrence, who answered in a manner characteristic of the man. The following account of the occurrence, with Mr. Lawrence's letter to a committee of the Association, we copy from the Boston Atlas:—

“A committee of three little boys was constituted, who on May-day morning acquainted their benefactor with the object of the Association, and the respect intended by what had been done. In a few days a gentleman's carriage halted at the school-house gate; the members of the committee were summoned to appear; and, presently afterwards, they were toiling up stairs, in much excitement, each with a bundle of books as large as he could carry. In reporting to the Association, the chairman stated that ‘The Committee were called to the door, where they met a *very benevolent-looking gentleman*, who spoke very kindly to them—told them they were good boys—and gave each of them a bundle of

books—and said he hoped they would *try to improve all in their power.*' The bundles were found to contain about one hundred volumes, sundry valuable articles of stationery, *ten dollars* in money, and the following very affecting note:—

*'Monday Morning, 10 o'clock, May 4th, '48.*

*'MY DEAR YOUNG FRIENDS:—*

*'Your "May-Flower," in the form of the note and Preamble and first Article of the "Lawrence Association of the Mather School," I shall keep as a precious flower for my grandsons; and by this you may know the estimation I have for your objects in forming, thus early, the habits so important to your future well-being. The difference between starting just right or a little wrong, in the journey of life, may make just the difference of your being on the sunny side of the hill, with pure air, and pleasant objects above and around you, at the age of mature life, or being in the dark slough, or the swamp, among reptiles, and insects, and poisonous and tormenting weeds, and dogwood, and briers, and thistles. In another communication I shall tell you more: but in this I have only strength to say, that a few months since I had a young son, just such in every thing as I wished. He lies buried in Mount Auburn, under the "Old Oak," which the keeper of the grounds will explain to you. When you visit this spot, cast a twig or a flower upon it, as I trust that his spirit is in unison with such as feel as he felt. With this you will receive some of his books, and some others, which I have hastily gathered, and which will help to keep him and your friend in mind. May you be*

strengthened to go forward in all good works. So  
prays

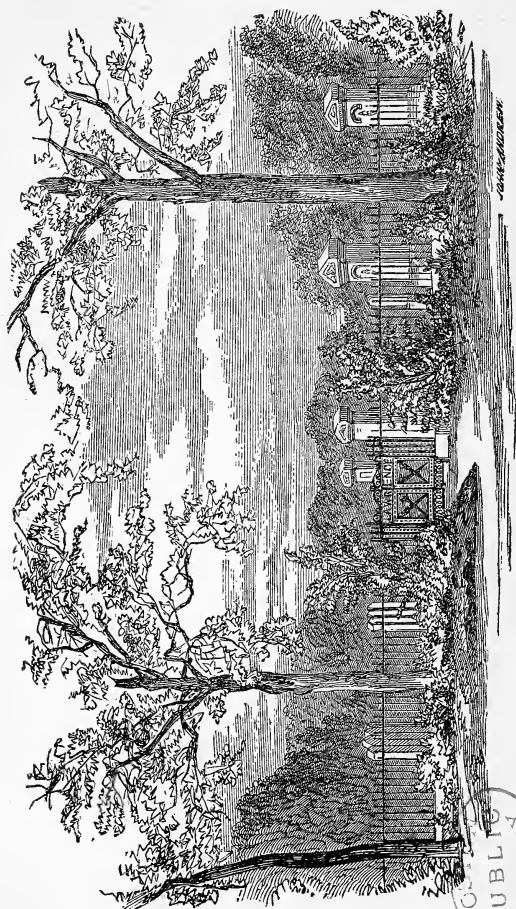
AMOS LAWRENCE.

To C. J. F. ALLEN, JR.,	}	Committee of the Lawrence Association of the Mather School.
D. A. SOUTHARD,		
N. S. JENNEY,		

‘P. S. The bill enclosed will help in little matters; the penknives to keep the pens mended, the blank books for memoranda, &c. A. L.’ ”

With this aid, the Association went on its way rejoicing, and soon exerted an excellent influence over the pupils of the school. The citizens of South Boston, together with the teachers of the school, contributed to the funds of the Association, and Mr. Lawrence also made repeated donations, until the library is now quite large and valuable.

Mr. Lawrence had been deeply afflicted by the loss of his son, a young man of promising talents. The Association sympathized strongly with Mr. Lawrence in his sorrow, and in October, 1846, the members visited Mt. Auburn to pay a tribute to the memory of Robert Means Lawrence, whose remains are there deposited. In two omnibuses, the members were conveyed to the gate-way, when they marched in silence up the main avenue. As they approached the grave, they sang a solemn, plaintive song, and then gathered around the last resting-place of their friend. Under the old oak that overhangs the Lawrence Enclosure (which is well represented by an engraving on the next page), they all stood in perfect silence, and listened with serious demeanor to some appropriate remarks from Mr. Josiah A. Stearns, the President of the Association, and then they united in singing the following original hymn, to the tune of “Home, sweet Home” :—



THE LAWRENCE ENCLOSURE, AT MT. AUBURN.



## TO THE MEMORY OF ROBERT MEANS LAWRENCE.

The old oak is riven, its branches lie low,  
And tears of affection abundantly flow ;  
For blasted, the promise of excellence here ;  
And earth now encloses the lov'd one so dear !

Dear, dear, lov'd, lov'd, dear !  
And earth now encloses the lov'd one so dear.

O fear not, he shouted, my spirit goes up ;  
My Father has mingled and given the cup,  
And through the dark valley I fearlessly roam,  
For lov'd ones have passed it, who beckon me home !

Home, home, lov'd, lov'd home !  
For lov'd ones have passed it, who beckon me home.

The pride of his father, his mother's delight,  
Then yielded his spirit and passed out of sight ;  
His life, though but transient, this tribute had won ;  
In all things he liv'd a most *dutiful son*.

Son, son, lov'd, lov'd son !  
In all things he liv'd a most *dutiful son*.

And he, that reposes beneath the cold sod,  
A spirit in glory, walks brightly with God ;  
So, bring ye of flowers, the fairest in bloom,  
And sprinkle their fragrance to hallow the tomb ;

Tomb, tomb, sad, sad tomb !  
And sprinkle their fragrance to hallow the tomb.

Before us he slumbers in garden of love ;  
And old oak is pointing to treasure above ;  
Bright angels are glancing, and heaven looks on,  
Delighting to honor the spirit that's gone.

Gone, gone, lov'd, lov'd, gone !  
Delighting to honor the spirit that's gone.

The moist eye, the quivering lip and the heaving breast clearly showed the deep emotion of those who took part in this mournful requiem, and an influence was exerted which will ever be remembered.

The next month after this visit to Mt. Auburn to express their sympathy with their patron in his affliction, the Association was called to mourn the loss of one of their own number, an especial favorite of all—one who by his winning manners and affable disposition had endeared himself in a peculiar manner to all his associates. On Monday, the 30th of November, 1846, DAVID ANSON SOUTHARD, who had been with them in as good health and spirits as any on Saturday morning, died from injuries occasioned by an accident which happened to him in his play. This sudden affliction excited deep feeling among the members of the Association; and as they gathered around his coffin they sang, to the same tune in which he had joined them so shortly before, lines composed for the occasion and expressive of their deep sorrow:—

“ O ! low lies the brother our hearts held so dear,  
And now have we come here to follow his bier ;  
Our bosoms are swelling, our full eyes are dim,  
For cold must the heart be that never lov'd him—  
Him, him,—lov'd, lov'd him !  
For *cold must the heart be* that never lov'd him.”

So deeply did this affect them, that the sad measure was often interrupted by their sobs and tears, and it was long before the unmeaning laugh and foolish chatter were heard again among the school-mates of the departed. Since this first instance of death among the members of the Association, many of their number have passed beyond the line of Time; and as at irregular intervals they have been called to part with loved companions, they have gathered in a body around the coffin of each, and paid the last sad tribute of affection and respect.

The first visit to Mt. Auburn was followed by several others at the invitation of Mr. Lawrence, all of which afforded much gratification to the members. He seemed to take a very deep interest in the Association, visiting the school frequently, and making many donations.

In February, 1847, he sent over to the Association two purses of money, and requested each member to contribute half a dollar from their contents towards the fund for the relief of the destitute in Ireland, then being raised in the city. One hundred and two members and four hundred and thirty-eight other pupils of the school availed themselves of the privilege, and contributed one hundred and sixty dollars.

On Christmas day, 1849, a silver cup was presented Mr. Lawrence by the misses of the Association.

The last time Mr. Lawrence visited the school, he was accompanied by General Franklin Pierce, at that time President elect of the United States.

On the night of December 31st, 1852, he died quite suddenly, and his funeral services were attended on the 4th of January, 1853, in Brattle Street Church, Boston. The Association attended, and gathering around the coffin and strewing it with flowers, sang the following hymn:—

He has gone—he has gone—  
To his spirit home;  
And oh, it thrills his soul with joy,  
In realms of bliss to roam;  
But we must shed the burning tear  
To part with him we love;  
And now for us the world is gloom,  
Since he has gone above.

He has gone—he has gone—  
To his spirit home;  
And oh, it thrills his soul with joy,  
In realms of bliss to roam.

Weeping eyes—broken hearts—  
Oft he bid rejoice;  
And homes of woe were full of praise,  
That heard his loving voice;  
For oft he soothed poor sorrow's tear,  
And wept when they were sad;  
And many were the orphan forms,  
His gen'rous bounty clad.  
Weeping eyes—broken hearts—  
Oft he bid rejoice;  
And homes of woe were full of praise,  
That heard his loving voice.

Gentle words—heav'nly thoughts—  
Linger where he trod;  
And oh, it was our childhood's charm,  
To hear him talk of God;  
Then let us ever strive to live,  
As he, our friend, has done;  
That we may reach the happy life  
Which he has now begun.  
Gentle words—heav'nly thoughts—  
Linger where he trod;  
And oh, it was our childhood's charm,  
To hear him talk of God.

Fare thee well—fare thee well—  
We around thee weep;  
But oh, we love thee, father, still,—  
And angels guard thy sleep.  
The kind "OLD OAK" for us no more  
Shall sheltering branches spread;  
And oh, our hearts are wrung with grief,  
For he we lov'd is dead.



Fare thee well—fare thee well—  
We around thee weep ;  
But oh, we love thee, father, still,—  
And angels guard thy sleep.

Since Mr. Lawrence's death, his son Amos A. Lawrence has evinced a deep interest in the Association, which is still in a most flourishing condition. To encourage the literary efforts of the members, he has distributed among them, in the form of prizes for excellent essays, the sum of forty dollars, annually.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

### SCHOOLS—CONTINUED.

#### *Bigelow School.*

In 1849, the two Grammar Schools in South Boston became so crowded that it was deemed necessary that another school should be immediately organized and a school-house built. After considerable delay, an order was passed for the erection of a school-house on the corner of E and Fourth streets, and on Thursday, May 2d, 1850, the Bigelow School-House was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies. Addresses were made by His Honor, Mayor BIGELOW, for whom the school was named ; BARNAS SEARS, Esq., Secretary of the Massachusetts Board of Education, and by other distinguished gentlemen, and the following dedicatory Hymn, written by JOHN TILLSON, was then sung by seventeen young ladies in a peculiarly beautiful manner.

Fount of Wisdom ! Source of Light !  
Father, Teacher, Friend and Guide ;  
Let thy sacred influence bright,  
O'er this hallowed scene preside ;  
While we grateful homage bring,  
And our cheerful voices raise ;  
Aid our vocal powers to sing—  
Teach us how to hymn thy praise !

For the rich and varied lore,  
Educated mind imparts ;  
For the treasures, here in store,  
Give us glad and thankful hearts.  
For the institutions great,  
Which our Commonwealth sustains :—  
All that elevates the State,—  
Faith's pure shrines, and Art's proud fanes !

For the intellectual wealth,  
Which exalts the present age :—  
Social culture,—moral health,—  
Which the *master minds* engage !  
All these blessings, freely shared,  
To thy bounteous hand we owe ;  
From thy care and kind regard,  
All our streams of knowledge flow.

Truth and Science, here unite,  
For thy glory and our weal—  
To improve thy gifts aright,  
Fill our youthful hearts with zeal ;  
On this stately Edifice,  
Rear'd in learning's holy cause,  
Shed thy beams of heavenly grace,  
Guard and rule it by thy laws !

The cost of the building itself was \$31,000, and the land on which it stands was \$8,500, making the total expense \$39,500. The building is 50 feet high.

A splendid clock, with two dials placed on the east and west ends of the house, is of the greatest convenience to the citizens of Ward XII. This clock was presented by Mayor Bigelow, and is another evidence of his desire for the happiness and well-being of the public.

The Bigelow School-House, standing as it does on high ground, commands a very extensive prospect, and from the Hall can be enjoyed a splendid view of the harbor, the city proper, and all the neighboring towns. (See engraving on next leaf.)

The Bigelow School is composed wholly of girls, and has at the present time (1857) above five hundred pupils, including about twenty who, with an equal number of boys belonging to the Hawes School, are, on account of their remoteness, taught in two Branch Schools, one at the Point and the other at Washington Village.

The fourth story of the building is wholly occupied by a large hall. Each of the other stories is divided into four rooms; those of the second and third stories being furnished with desks and chairs, two of them for 56 pupils, and the remaining six for 63 pupils each. The rooms on the lower floor are occupied by Primary Schools; there is also an Intermediate School for girls in one of the rooms of the second story.

The Bigelow School proper (that is, in the building) is taught by a master and seven female assistants. The five primary schools have, on an average, about sixty-five pupils each. The whole number of children attending school in the building is above seven hundred and fifty.

Mr. Frederick Crafts was first master, and was succeeded by Mr. Joseph Hale in August, 1852.

*Lawrence School.*

The old School-House having become far too small to accommodate the pupils desirous of attending, appropriations were made for a new school edifice, and on the 11th of September, 1856, the Lawrence School was removed to the magnificent building at the corner of Third and B streets. This edifice, 60 feet by 90 feet on the ground, is built of brick and covered with mastic; its walls are double, with a space between the bricks to secure dryness and facilitate ventilation. It is nearly a fire-proof building, all the partitions being of brick and the space between the floors being filled with hard cement. Its interior is finished with chestnut wood and varnished. It is four stories high, and contains fourteen school-rooms, a large hall capable of seating five hundred persons, a small room for the Library of the Lawrence Association, and another for the master, which is papered and carpeted and furnished with a library of reference and a cabinet of curiosities and minerals. The building is heated throughout by steam, has entirely separate yards for the boys and girls, and in the basement a large sheltered play-ground for the children, forming altogether one of the finest school-houses in Boston. (An engraved view of it is given on another page.)

The cost of the building and the land on which it stands was between \$60,000 and \$70,000. It is a pleasing coincidence that it bears the name of one of the warmest friends and patrons of the youth of South Boston, and also has a deep historical interest, inasmuch as it is situated on the precise spot where stood the fortification on Nook's Hill, the erection of which, as has been fully stated in a preceding



BIGELOW SCHOOL-HOUSE—ERECTED IN 1849. (Page 147.)



LAWRENCE SCHOOL-HOUSE—ERECTED IN 1856. (Page 148.)



chapter of this work, caused the British to evacuate Boston. On Tuesday, March 17th, 1857, the 81st anniversary of the evacuation, this beautiful building was dedicated to the cause of learning by appropriate services. The exercises consisted of prayer, reading the scriptures, presentation of the keys, addresses, and the singing by the pupils of original songs, two of which were composed by the master and one by Mr. C. J. F. Allen, Jr., a former pupil. The Hall was decorated with flowers, and the black boards were covered with beautiful drawings executed by the pupils. The doors of the several rooms being thrown open, exhibited to visitors the happy countenances of the children who occupied them. Rev. CHARLES S. PORTER presided, and the occasion was honored by the presence of ALEXANDER H. RICE, Mayor of the City, the venerable Hon. JOSIAH QUINCY, RICHARD FROTHINGHAM, JR., Esq., SAMUEL GREELE, Esq., Ex-Governor BOUTWELL, Rev. THOMAS B. FOX, Rev. R. W. CLARK, Mr. PHILBRICK, Superintendent of the Boston Schools, and other gentlemen. The services were of a deeply interesting character, and were concluded by singing the original hymn, one stanza of which we insert.

Proudly inscribed with the name we would honor,

Here, let the off'ring be *worthy of him!*

Watchful each vestal with white robes upon her,

See, that its glory may never grow dim!

Patron of virtue he—

Helper of poverty—

Lover of science, and friendly to all.—

Gratefully pledge the vow—

Write it in heaven now—

Worthy of LAWRENCE we'll render the hall!

The school is organized with boys and girls in every class, and in this respect it differs from every other public school in Boston. It has a master, a sub-master, 12 female assistants, a teacher of plain sewing, a teacher of music, and a janitor to tend fires and take care of the building. The number of pupils belonging to the school, on the day of the dedication, was 797. The daily attendance of the pupils averages not far from 90 per cent.

Josiah A. Stearns, A. M., is the Principal.

### *Primary Schools.*

The first Primary School was established in Boston in 1818. The precise year when a Primary School was opened in South Boston, is not known. It is supposed, however, that during the year 1819 or 1820 such a school was established. The first teacher was Mrs. Catharine Thayer. We have before us the report of this school in 1821, and we copy it from the original document as preserved by the Primary School Board:—

“On Friday afternoon, 28th of September, in obedience to the direction of the Standing Committee of the Board of Primary Schools, I visited the school at South Boston, kept by Mrs. Thayer. I was attended by William Dall, Esq.

1st,

	were present,					and absent,			
4th class,	8 boys,	3 girls,	total	11.	:	1 boy,	3 girls,	total	4.
3d	“	6 “	9 “	“	15.	:	0 “	1 “	“ 1.
2d	“	3 “	6 “	“	9.	:	0 “	1 “	“ 1.
1st	“	9 “	6 “	“	15.	:	0 “	1 “	“ 1.
					:				
	26	24		50	:	1	6		7

“Of seven years old there were none in the fourth or third classes; in the second, 2 boys and 1 girl; and in the first, 2 boys and no girls; in all, 5.



" 2d. No boy or girl in this school is qualified, or can be for six months, for the Grammar School; but 7 have gone in the last six months.

" 3d. Watts's Shorter Catechism is used alone.

" 4th. The mistress teaches with proper accent.

" 5th. The school hours are conformed to, but in the past summer the mistress has begun an hour earlier, to accommodate the children who come in company with elder ones attending another school in the forenoon.

" 6th. School is every day opened with prayer.

" 7th. The principal punishment is by detention, which the instructor thinks has a good effect; whipping is sometimes necessary.

" 8th. The new system has not been put in operation.

" 9th. The school was visited by Mr. Dall about four weeks since.

" 10. The general state of the school is as bad as any I have seen in town. More than two-thirds of the children in the fourth class are destitute of books, and a quarter at least of those in the third class. Eight of the children in the fourth class are in their alphabet; but the three others, all boys, may be advanced in three months to the third class. The third class appear tolerably well, and, if not too soon advanced, may make good scholars. The second class is the poorest I have ever seen; one half of them would be poor scholars for the third, and one boy was so struck with a sense of his inferiority as to desire to be reduced one degree, in which he was gratified. They were deficient in every particular; knew little of spelling, less of stops, nothing of the vulgarisms or abbreviations, or words of similar sound but different spelling. Of the first class

I am obliged to speak almost as ill as of the second; yet they read tolerably well, and five of the fifteen could spell words of three syllables. Every one ought to be in the second class, yet all, except one, have been in the first from last February, when the new system was introduced, but not followed. This school needs the attention of the Committee; and the mistress, who appears to be an excellent woman, and able to govern and teach, might soon raise its character if they would visit and examine it once a week. But the materials are so poor, that, unless a firm support is given to the teacher by the Committee, to enable her to resist the whims of the parents, who wish their children to be *put up* before they can *advance* by their own strength, the school must be almost useless.

JAS. SAVAGE."

We have also a list of the names of the scholars, with the number of hymns and verses of the Bible which they had committed. This first school was kept in a room in the house occupied by the instructor, and situated near the corner of Dorchester and Third streets.

In 1824 another Primary School was established, having Miss Cole for teacher. This was kept on Fourth street, between B and C streets.

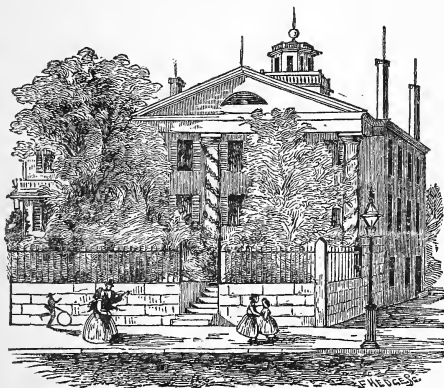
For many years each school had a separate Committee man. On January 8th, 1855, a new organization was made, the Grammar School Board enlarged, and all the schools placed under their charge.

There are in South Boston four convenient brick buildings owned by the city and occupied by fifteen Primary Schools. The remainder are in the Grammar School-Houses or private rooms.

*The Mount Washington Female Institute*

Was founded May, 1835, by Mrs. Burrill, with the view of providing a place where young ladies might obtain a liberal education at a moderate rate. The number of pupils who attended the first term was 49. Since that time many misses have been connected with the institution. It is still under the charge of Mrs. Burrill, aided by several female assistants.

The course of education pursued by the young ladies of the Institute is extensive, comprehending all those attainments which may be found necessary, useful or ornamental in society. Every effort is made to store the minds of the pupils with knowledge, and to inculcate in their hearts the principles of virtue and morality.



The seminary and boarding-house are situated on Mount Washington, near the Institution for the Blind. The site is one of the most healthy and beautiful in New England, and commands a view of the city, harbor, and many of the surrounding towns. (A view of it is presented above.)

## CHAPTER XIV.

## CHURCHES.

IN the early history of South Boston, the inhabitants were obliged to attend church in Dorchester, as there were not residents enough in Mattapanock to support a minister. The people were in the habit of going to Dorchester meeting-house on Sunday morning, and remaining all day. Soon after Dorchester Neck was annexed to Boston proper, several of the inhabitants, members of Rev. Dr. Harris's Society in Dorchester, desired to have a nearer place of worship. Mr. John Hawes, a benevolent and public-spirited citizen, appropriated a piece of ground as early as June, 1807, on which a house for public worship was to be erected. This land he caused to be conveyed to the inhabitants of South Boston.

In the year 1810, he joined with his neighbors in erecting a building, for a temporary place of worship, and Rev. Thomas Pierce, of Milton, a clergyman of the Methodist denomination, who had occasionally ministered to them in their private dwellings, was employed as their minister. He preached to them for about two years, and then returned to the Methodist connexion. About this time, the town of Boston granted a sum of money for the support of a public school in South Boston, and Mr. Zephaniah Wood, of Lunenburg, as has already been mentioned, was appointed master of the school. Mr. Wood was an excellent man, of the Orthodox persuasion, and being much given to study, he engaged to pursue such studies as might render him acceptable and

useful to the little church which had been gathered, while at the same time he gratuitously performed the services of a pastor.

In the year 1818, the Society, having considerably increased, obtained of the Legislature an act of incorporation, with the title of THE HAWES PLACE CONGREGATIONAL SOCIETY. They also enlarged their temporary place of worship. The first meeting was in a wooden one-story building, about forty feet long, and twenty wide, situated eastward of the Heights, near the site of the present Church, but facing on the Old Road. On either side of the door were singers' seats, raised somewhat above the other pews. Opposite the door was a low wooden pulpit. The ceiling was plastered, but the sides were left bare, the spaces between the beams being filled with rough bricks.

The enlargement mentioned above was an addition of some twenty feet to the length of the meeting-house, making it sixty feet long, and giving it so much the appearance of a rope-walk, that it was called by that name.

The act of incorporation was passed in February, and approved by the Governor, John Brooks, on the 19th of that month. On the 13th day of May, 1819, those members of the Society, who were communicants, met to deliberate upon the expediency of forming a regular Church; and "Voted unanimously, that the Secretary of this meeting (Mr. Wood) be requested to take such measures as shall be deemed requisite to effect such object."

At an adjourned meeting of these communicants, Oct. 11th, 1819, it was "Voted unanimously, that letters missive be addressed to the Rev. Mr. Harris of Dorchester, the Rev. Mr. Porter of Roxbury, and

the Rev. Mr. Norton of Weymouth, requesting them to attend on the 27th instant, at 10 o'clock, A. M., with one delegate each, as a council to assist in organizing said members into a Church." Accordingly, an Ecclesiastical Council assembled, Oct. 27th, 1819, and accomplished the object for which they had been convened. The Rev. Dr. Porter was chosen Moderator. He performed the devotional exercises, and administered baptism to several new members, then admitted, who had not been baptized. The Rev. Dr. Harris was chosen Scribe, and preached a discourse; and the Rev. Mr. Norton gave the right hand of fellowship to the Church, through their minister, Mr. Wood, who had been deputed to receive it.

This Church at first consisted of fourteen members, six male and eight female. They held their first meeting Nov. 15, 1819, at the house of Mr. John Hawes, and unanimously chose Mr. Wood to be Clerk, and Isaac Thom and Thomas Hammond to be Deacons.

With a view to render himself more useful to this Church and Society, Mr. Wood received ordination as an Evangelist, by a Council convened at Weymouth, Nov. 13, 1821, though he never held any pastoral relation to them.

Mr. Wood was not, however, permitted to continue long in his office. In August, 1822, he was seized with a violent fever, and after enduring much suffering, died on the 26th of October, at the age of 31 years. His death was much lamented by the Church and Society, and by all who had ever enjoyed his acquaintance. As a man he was universally respected, and as a Christian his character was unblemished. He left a wife and several young children to mourn his loss.

During the sickness of the Rev. Mr. Wood, the Rev. Lemuel Capen, of Dorchester, who not long before had dissolved his ministerial connexion with the church and society in Sterling, was requested to preach to this society. Soon after the decease of Mr. Wood, Mr. Capen was appointed to succeed him as master of the public school, and continued, by their request, to "minister to them in the word." At a legal meeting of the society, January 28, 1823, they invited him to become their permanent minister, to which invitation he gave an affirmative answer. On account of his connexion with the school, however, further measures for his installation were deferred. In consequence of this step of the society, at a legal meeting of the Church, March 23, 1823, he was chosen to be the clerk of the Church. He continued thus to preach and administer the ordinances of the gospel to them till the autumn of 1827. At a legal meeting of the society, October 8th of that year, they unanimously renewed their invitation to him to become their permanent minister; and he again signified his acceptance. An Ecclesiastical Council was accordingly convened for his installation, October 31, 1827; on which occasion, the following churches were represented:—the Rev. Dr. Porter's and Dr. Gray's in Roxbury; Rev. Dr. Harris's and Dr. Richmond's in Dorchester; the Rev. Mr. Whitney's in Quincy, and the Rev. Mr. Pierpont's in Boston.

In January, 1829, John Hawes, who was one of the founders of the Church, and who had ever been its friend, died, leaving a considerable amount of property to the Church, and also to the inhabitants of South Boston. (See Appendix G.)

The donation of Mr. Hawes enabled the Hawes

Place Society to erect a new house of worship, on the site presented by that gentleman in 1807. This building is a neat wooden edifice, 60 by 46 feet, and capable of seating between four and five hundred persons. It is surmounted by a steeple, in which a bell is suspended. This building was dedicated January 1, 1833, and bears on a tablet in front the following inscription:—

THIS HOUSE ERECTED  
BY THE  
HAWES PLACE SOCIETY,  
*For the Worship of God, A. D. 1832,*  
by a munificent donation from  
MR. JOHN HAWES,  
who died Jan. 22, 1829,  
aged 88 years.

In 1839, Rev. Lemuel Capen resigned his office as pastor of the church, and Rev. Charles C. Shackford was ordained as his successor, May 19, 1841, and left May, 1843. Rev. George W. Lippitt was ordained May 9, 1844, and remained until January 1, 1851. Rev. Thomas Dawes was his successor, May 21, 1854.

In 1855 the church was entirely re-modelled, circular pews introduced, a new pulpit built, and other improvements made. The fund left by Mr. Hawes is sufficient to defray all expenses.

#### *St. Matthew's Church.*

The first incorporated religious society in South Boston was the present Episcopal Church. On the 24th of March, 1816, St. Matthew's Church was organized, and on the following Sunday, March 31st,



the first public services were performed in the "school-house," by Mr. Cotting, a lay reader. This gentleman continued to act in that capacity till the 21st of June, 1818, receiving occasional assistance from some of the clergymen of the city. The congregations at this period are reported to have varied from ten to seventy persons.

In 1817 the society commenced the erection of the first house of worship built in South Boston, and on the 24th of June, 1818, St. Matthew's Church was consecrated with appropriate services by the Right Rev. Alexander V. Griswold, D. D., Bishop of the Eastern Diocese. The expenses of its erection were chiefly defrayed by benevolent members of Trinity and Christ churches, with a view to the future wants of South Boston. The land on which it stands was bought of Mr. Abraham Gould, who was for many years one of the wardens of the Church. A service of plate for the use of the altar was presented by the ladies of Christ Church, and the pulpit, desk and chancel were furnished by the ladies of Trinity Church. Mrs. Elizabeth Bowdoin Winthrop was a most liberal benefactor.

On the 5th of July, 1817, an arrangement was made with Mr. Addison Searle, a candidate for holy orders, to act as lay reader, and this gentleman, with some aid from the clergymen of the city, sustained public worship until March 30th, 1819. Mr. Searle was soon after ordained, and received an appointment as Chaplain in the Navy. His death on board the frigate Cumberland, on the Mediterranean station, has lately been announced.

On Mr. Searle's resignation, Mr. R. G. Parker was engaged to officiate as lay reader, but continued his services only till the 19th of September. The

names of Mr. Theodore Edson, Isaac Boyle, and I. H. Price, all of them candidates for the ministry, and afterwards ordained, occur in the records, as conducting the public worship from Mr. Parker's resignation till 19th of March, 1820, at which time Mr. Edson appears to have made a permanent arrangement with the Wardens and Vestry, and to have continued his services till about March, 1824. He was succeeded, after a short interval, by the Rev. J. L. Blake, who was the first ordained clergyman settled over the Parish. He remained Rector of St. Matthew's till the 24th of June, 1832. During the latter part of the year 1831, the Church was closed, in order to enlarge the building to its present size.

On Mr. Blake's resignation, the Church was supplied for about three months by the Rev. M. A. De W. Howe, who was at that time Master of the Hawes School. He ceased to officiate on the 14th of October, 1832, and the Church was closed from that date till the 2d of February, 1834, when it was opened for public worship by the Rev. E. M. P. Wells, who continued his services till April, 1835. To him succeeded the Rev. H. L. Conolly, who was Rector of St. Matthew's from April, 1835, to April, 1838. On his resignation, the services of the Rev. W. Bull and others were secured until the 10th of June, 1838, when the Rev. Joseph H. Clinch engaged to supply the Church for three months, at the expiration of which time he was chosen Rector, and was instituted as such on the 23d of September, 1838, by Bishop Griswold. This gentleman still continues his pastoral relation.

The society at the present time numbers about one hundred families, and there are about one hundred communicants connected with the Church. The

church edifice is a neat brick building, situated on Broadway, between D and E streets, and is 35 feet front by 80 feet deep. Under the church are quite a number of vaults used as tombs, owned by various individuals, and under the supervision of the City Authorities. In the belfry still remains the bell which was formerly suspended in the cupola of Faneuil Hall, and which was granted to the Church by the town authorities on condition that it be rung for fire alarms, &c.

*St. Augustine's Church.*

In the year 1819, the members of the Franklin street Roman Catholic Church thought it advisable to erect a place for Roman Catholic services in South Boston, and accordingly built the church situated on Dorchester street, and known as the "Old Catholic Church." The distinguished Right Reverend Bishop Cheverus had the ministerial charge of the Franklin street Church, and by his activity and assistance St. Augustine's Church was erected.

It was doubtless the intention of the Rev. Mr. Thayer to have located a convent of Ursuline Nuns near this Church, as he made provision in his will for the establishment of such an institution, and expressed his opinion that that would be the most eligible situation. In 1820, four nuns, by invitation of Bishop Cheverus, arrived in Boston, and devoted themselves to the instruction of female children till 1826, when the Ursuline Community was established at Charlestown. The fate of that institution is well known, and the blackened ruins of the convent still remain to point out a chapter in the history of the Catholic institutions of America. It was probably but a slight circumstance that prevented South Bos-

ton from being the scene of occurrences similar to those which took place some years since in Charlestown.

The church is a small brick building, and was consecrated by Bishop Fenwick in 1833, at which time Rev. Thomas Lynch was appointed pastor. He retained his office till 1836, when Rev. John Mahoney was made Priest of the Church, and continued in this office till 1839. Rev. M. Lynch was then appointed to take the pastoral charge, but continued in office only a year, and was succeeded by Rev. Terrence Fitzsimmons. In 1844, a new Catholic Church was formed in South Boston, and St. Augustine's Church became a part of that.

The old church is now seldom used, and is rapidly going to decay. Adjoining it is a large cemetery used exclusively for the burial of Roman Catholics. This grave-yard has been used for many years, and a large number of bodies are interred in it.

The Church has a most picturesque situation, on Dorchester street, near Sixth street. It is surrounded by beautiful elm-trees, which, when clad in the foliage of summer, completely hide the Church from view. As the wind sighs among the trees, and chants a solemn requiem to the dead who repose below, the solitude of the place and the almost unbroken stillness which pervades the yard make the place one of peculiar interest, and we have heard it said that there is not a more beautiful spot in Massachusetts. It has often been noticed, that there is a remarkable regularity in the position of the trees which surround the Church. There is a tradition handed down in a family that has long resided in South Boston, that, many years since, an English nobleman selected that spot as a site upon which to erect a mansion. He

accordingly planted elm trees on three sides of the lot, leaving an almost unbounded prospect towards the west. He died, however, before he commenced his proposed dwelling.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

### CHURCHES—CONTINUED.

#### *Phillips Church.*

As was stated in the History of the Hawes Place Church, the first two clergymen who preached in South Boston entertained religious views differing from those now entertained by the members of the parent church. All denominations were then united, and all worshipped together in peace and unity. Rev. Thomas Pierce was a Methodist at the time he preached in South Boston, and Rev. Zephaniah Wood was a Trinitarian, till some dispute which arose upon the doctrines of their creeds caused him to dissent, and he then became somewhat Arminian in his sentiments.

At Mr. Wood's death, a majority of the society chose to have a minister of Unitarian views, and the minority felt obliged to leave that place of worship. The separation was effected peaceably, and with mutual kind feelings. Some continued to go to their old place of worship, some attended occasionally the Episcopal service—although that Church had then no settled minister—and others went to Orthodox places of worship in the city.

The few dissenters felt bound, however, to continue on the ground which they thought had been

committed to them. They also felt the personal loss of religious privileges, and after some discussion it was thought best to appoint a prayer-meeting at a private house. In this prayer-meeting, the Orthodox, Methodists and Baptists were united, although at first but few attended. The number, however, increased, until one room was insufficient to contain them, and 30 or 40 persons would sometimes be present. These prayer-meetings were seasons of sweet communion, and an aged lady, in describing them, said, "We enjoyed ourselves *together*; we didn't know any better then."

From this prayer-meeting sprung not only the Orthodox, but the Methodist Church in South Boston; and in the history of the latter Church, some other interesting particulars will be given in regard to it, which have a more special bearing on that Society.

South Boston, at that time, presented a far different appearance from its present aspect. It contained about fifteen hundred inhabitants, with no such street as Broadway, save as it had been traced out by the furrow of the plough. It was in a manner destitute of religious privileges, and was the resort of multitudes of Sabbath-breakers from the other side, to whom the green fields and beautiful hills of Mattapanock offered a tempting place for recreation. It would seem to have been an almost hopeless task to attempt to organize a new church; and yet, with the aid of a few benevolent gentlemen of the town of Boston, among whom may be mentioned Mr. Henry Homes and Mr. George J. Homer, names never to be forgotten, Rev. Prince Hawes was engaged to preach half the time on the Sabbath.

Harris Hall, now converted into a dwelling-house,

and situated in the next building east of the stable of Benjamin Lucas, on Fourth street, between D and E streets, was the building first occupied by the little band as a place of worship. It was small, and contained, when full, about forty or fifty persons. This was in February, 1823, and about the same time a Sabbath School was gathered, and a single brother and sister were at first the only teachers. A female prayer-meeting was also commenced, and a Ladies' Benevolent Society was formed. Both of these still continue.

Harris Hall became in a short time too small for the numbers that attended, and in the summer of 1823, a benevolent gentleman, still a member of the society, at his own expense erected what was called Union Hall. It stands on Fourth street, between B and C streets, opposite the residence of Capt. Jacob Herrick, and is now used as a dwelling-house. Here one hundred and fifty persons could be comfortably seated, and, without any assistance from abroad, all the furniture usually found in a small meeting-house was provided.

A very respectable audience was now gathered every Sabbath, and it was thought advisable to have a church organized, which as yet had not been done. Accordingly a council was called for the purpose, of which Rev. Sereno E. Dwight, of Park Street Church, was Moderator, and Rev B. B. Wisner, of the Old South Church, was Scribe. Thirteen persons presented themselves, and desired to become members—viz.: Rufus Ball, Isaac Thom, Sophia Thom, Thos. Hammond, Abigail Fenno, and Hannah Dewire, with letters from the Hawes Place Church; Joseph Johnson, from the church in Woburn; Mary B. Simonds, from the church in Fitchburg; Anna Hewins, from

the Park Street Church; Sumner Fuller, from the Old South Church; and Abel Hewins, Phebe Hollis and Charlotte Howard, on profession.

The Council voted unanimously to comply with their request, and on the 10th day of December, 1823, "The Evangelical Congregational Church in South Boston" was duly organized, and the public exercises were held in the Hall.

In due time the Church increased in numbers, and gained strength sufficient to build a brick meeting-house on the corner of A street and Broadway. This edifice was somewhat smaller than the present meeting-house, and had no galleries. On the basement was a vestry. It was dedicated, with appropriate ceremonies, on the 19th day of March, 1825. The sermon on the occasion was preached by Rev. Prince Hawes.

In the month of March, 1834, the Society was incorporated by the Legislature under the title of the "PHILLIPS CHURCH SOCIETY IN BOSTON." At the time when the name Phillips was given to the Society, it was proposed to designate the cross streets in South Boston by the names of the Mayors, and not by the letters of the alphabet. A Street was to be called Phillips street, after John Phillips, the first Mayor of Boston; and hence, as the meeting-house was erected on that street, it received the name by which it is now designated.

Rev. Prince Hawes was installed pastor of the Church on the 28th of April, 1824, and was dismissed on the 18th of April, 1827. He died a few years since, at Long Island. On the 22d of November 1827, Rev. Joy H. Fairchild was installed as pastor, and was dismissed on the 2d of June, 1842.



Rev. William W. Patton was ordained as pastor of the church and society on the 16th of January, 1843. The sermon on the occasion was preached by his father, the Rev. Dr. Patton, of New York city. Mr. Patton was but twenty-one years of age when ordained, and remained pastor till the 23d of December, 1845, when he acceded to the call of the Fourth Congregational Church at Hartford, Conn., to become their pastor.

Rev. John W. Alvord, of Stamford, Conn., was then invited to become pastor, and on the 4th of November, 1846, he was duly installed. He resigned, on account of ill health, in March, 1852, and Rev. Charles S. Porter, of Plymouth, was installed his successor in February, 1854, and still remains pastor of the Church.

In 1835, the brick church was taken down, and its place supplied by the present edifice, a wooden building, standing on the corner of Broadway and A street. It is seventy-eight by sixty-five feet, fronting on A street, and has one hundred and six pews in the body of the house. It is capable of seating about nine hundred persons. In the basement is a large vestry, and three stores. Surmounting the building is a tall steeple, in which hangs a bell weighing about two thousand pounds. There is also a clock, with four dials, placed in the steeple.

The present number of communicants is about two hundred and fifty.

### *South Baptist Church.*

More than a third of a century has elapsed, since the formation of a Baptist Church in South Boston became the object of desire among the few of this denomination of Christians who then resided here;

but their presence and aid were much needed in the churches with which they were connected, in other parts of the city.

Impressed, however, with the importance of preparing for the spiritual wants and religious preferences of an anticipated increase of population, an effort was made to establish a Baptist Meeting. The Phillips Church kindly offered the use of their house of worship, which was accepted, and Mr. Ensign Lincoln, a good man, and well known as first in many a good enterprise, assisted by several of the city pastors, sustained a weekly lecture for a short time. But the attendance was deemed insufficient to justify a continuance of the effort in that form.

Though this seemed a failure to some, it only served to confirm and strengthen the hope and purpose of others. And though this plan was relinquished, it was only that a more successful one might be commenced on a firmer basis. A worthy member of the Baldwin Place Church, whose name and noble deeds are well known in this part of the city, even as they form a prominent part of its history, had already thrown his sympathies into the new interest. He purchased a small building which had been occupied as a place of religious meeting by the Methodists, and gave the use of it to his brethren, for the same object. This building, now used as a bath-house, occupies its original locality, on the corner of Broadway and C street, directly opposite the present South Baptist Meeting-house; and the contrast between the two, presents to the observer a fair index of the progress which has been accomplished during 23 years.

For more than three years this was their place of meeting. The pulpit was during this time supplied

chiefly by Rev. Messrs. Harvey Ball, Otis Wing, and Thomas Driver.

In 1827 the Federal street (now Rowe street) Baptist Church was formed. But their enterprising pastor, now the Rev. Howard Malcom, D. D., of Philadelphia, encouraged his members residing in South Boston to proceed in their hopeful undertaking. And the more efficiently to accomplish their object, nineteen members of different churches in the city united together, in August, 1829, and were recognized as a *branch* of the Federal street Church. For nearly two years this relation was continued, and the Branch Church experienced considerable prosperity. Their house of worship became too small, as well for their accommodation as for their anticipated wants. The purpose was formed, and a plan adopted, to obtain a more commodious one. The rapid increase of the First Baptist Church and congregation in Boston made it necessary for them, at that time, to enlarge their place of meeting. They had resolved to take down their house, which was then a good one, and to replace it with a larger brick edifice. That house was purchased by the Baptists in South Boston, taken down, removed and re-erected on the site which it now occupies. It was newly covered and finished. It is 72 feet long and 57 wide, and contains 104 pews, besides the orchestra, which contains a large organ. In its tower is a large and fine-toned bell. This edifice was dedicated to the worship of God, by appropriate religious services, July 22, 1830. In the vestry yet remains the same "sacred desk," from which the eloquent and now sainted Stillman, of the First Church, was long accustomed to pour forth, in silver tones, the word of life to listening crowds.

Having accomplished this enterprise, and beginning to experience the benefits of it, in a larger congregation, the Branch deemed it wise to sever their peculiar connection with the Federal street Church. This was done, and the members formed themselves into a regular Baptist Church, and were publicly recognized, by appropriate religious services, as the South Baptist Church in Boston, March 1, 1831. The Rev. Howard Malcom delivered the sermon on that occasion, and Mr. R. H. Neale, now the Rev. Dr. Neale, Pastor of the First Baptist Church, received the token of fellowship from the Council, in behalf of the new church. Mr. Neale became their first pastor, and labored with them for nearly four years. And though his time was much occupied in his theological studies, his labors were greatly blessed, the Church having increased from 52 members to 132, which it numbered when he was dismissed March 19, 1834. His departure was deeply regretted and proved an unfortunate event for the Church.

In the winter of 1834, the South Baptist Church seemed to have entered upon a season of long prosperity. Their meeting-house was new, inviting and commodious. The congregation gradually increased. The Church were happily united in their pastor, whose labors seemed abundantly crowned with success. But fond hopes and fair prospects and ardent enthusiasm were all blighted, in the spring, by the sudden rupture of the pastoral relation; and the influence of that separation was long felt.

Within a few weeks of Mr. Neale's dismissal, the church invited the Rev. T. R. Cressey, now of Indianapolis, Ia., to become their pastor, which invitation he accepted. But the deep regret and disappointment, consequent upon the departure of his prede-

cessor, made his ministry trying, though in some degree successful. He remained only one year, and was then dismissed at his own request. For more than two years, from this time, the Church remained without a regular pastor. And those were years of trial, of varying hopes and fears, of lights and shades. Yet even a darker and severer period followed them. The night, though cheered by many a bright star, was sad and long. Yet it broke not till one more dismal hour passed over them. In the winter of 1838, Mr. Wm. Jackson, from Halifax, N. S., was recommended to the Society, and commenced ministering to them with much acceptance. The Church invited him, though with some opposition to the vote, to assume the pastoral charge. But before the connection was consummated, his singular and extravagant course resulted in a sad division of the Church, and his ejection from the pulpit, and finally in his exclusion from its membership. The details of that mournful period in this history would be neither pleasant nor profitable. But the division was soon healed, and the divided band, newly tried and sifted, again united, and rallied to their work, and began to hope.

On the 1st of December, 1838, Rev. Thomas Driver commenced his pastoral labors with the Church, which continued with much success for four years and three months. Under his ministry the number of members was greatly increased. The pecuniary embarrassments of the Society were much relieved, and the future presented a more hopeful aspect. Mr. D. was dismissed March 12, 1843.

In November of the same year Rev. Duncan Dunbar, then of New York city, was invited to the vacant pastorate, which he accepted, and was installed Jan.

1st, 1844. His ministry covered nearly two years of trial. He resigned his trust to the Church, Nov. 24, 1845, bearing away with him the respect and kind regard of those who had attended on his ministrations.

On the 21st of January, 1846, the Rev. George W. Bosworth was called to the place which had been vacated, which call he accepted by entering upon his public labors in February succeeding. He continued the pastor of the Church, which prospered greatly under his care, till March, 1855, when he received and accepted a call to settle in Portland, Me. He was succeeded by Rev. J. A. Goodhue, the present pastor, October 1, 1855.

### *Methodist Episcopal Church.*

It will be recollected that on a previous page we mentioned a prayer meeting which was held in South Boston about the year 1810. Among those attending this meeting was a widow named Robinson, who was a zealous Methodist. She felt that a minister was greatly needed in South Boston, and determined to procure one. Accordingly she went to Boston, and endeavored to secure the services of a clergyman. She did not succeed very well, and at last went to Mr. T. C. Pierce, then a young man, a carpenter by trade, but of a very serious turn of mind. She told him he must come over and preach; and he did so, much to the satisfaction of the old lady and her friends, although the preacher was not a college learned man.

This same Mr. Pierce is now well known as the good old Father Pierce, a superannuated clergyman residing at Lynn. In August, 1810, as we learn from a letter from old Father Pierce, which we have now

before us, the services were commenced in the house of the widow. In the course of three months a larger room was obtained in a house a short distance from the former place, and here Mr. Pierce officiated afternoon and evening during the winter and spring. About this time a Mr. Deluce opened a building near the shore, north of the widow's house in which the meetings were first held. This place was occupied some three or four months, but was not well liked, and with his own hands the carpenter minister went to work, and erected a place of worship. This house was the building mentioned in connection with the history of the Hawes Place Church, as the rope-walk. It was built during the summer of 1811, and would hold from seventy-five to one hundred hearers. The cost was divided into shares of five dollars, a portion being taken by the South Bostonians, and a portion by benevolent individuals in Boston. Mr. Pierce, however, did not receive much for his work.

From these statements it will be seen that Father Pierce was the first clergyman who ever officiated in South Boston; and the Methodist denomination was the first that established regular worship here.

The following extract from Mr. Pierce's letter, will be interesting:—

“All the support I had for my labors was a public contribution on the Sabbath, which usually amounted to seventy-five cents or a dollar, with a week's board now and then. We had pretty good singing, a good congregation generally, and some few conversions. We formed no separate church, but went to the Bromfield street Church as our home.”

Among those who assisted Mr. Pierce during his ministry, were the late Dr. Baldwin, the late Dr. Codman of Dorchester, Rev. T. W. Tucker, and

"Father Taylor," the world-renowned Seaman preacher. In 1814, Father Pierce joined the New England Methodist Conference, and was appointed to another field of labor. He was succeeded by Rev. Zephaniah Wood, of whom we have spoken at considerable length elsewhere. About this time theological controversy ran high. A book called "Worcester's Bible Views" was published, and was very extensively circulated. Mr. Wood embraced the views advocated in that publication, and became a Congregationalist; and the character of the feeble church was changed. Thus ended the first effort to establish a Methodist Episcopal Church in South Boston.

In the year 1825, another attempt was made to organize a Methodist Church. About this time a large number of persons of the Methodist persuasion came to work in the glass-houses (then four in number), and uniting with those already residing in South Boston, they erected a building on the corner of Broadway and C streets, and for a time all went on prosperously. Suddenly, however, the proprietors of the glass-houses failed, and the men were obliged to remove elsewhere to obtain work. Deprived of these powerful auxiliaries, the feeble Methodist Church became disheartened, and the building passed into the hands of the Baptists. It is now standing, and is occupied as a bath-house. Not long since, it was found necessary to raise it to accord with the new grade of Broadway, and the large timbers used in the construction of the basement floor clearly showed the design for which it was built.

The third and more successful effort to establish a M. E. Church here was made in 1834, and sustained by some who still live to bless with their piety and wisdom the Church they contributed so largely to



found. A preaching place was opened, and Rev. Abel Stevens, now of New York, preached the first sermon, to a congregation of eight, all told. This place becoming too strait for the increasing congregation, they soon moved to Harding's Hall, corner of Fourth and Turnpike streets, and thence to Franklin Hall, on the opposite corner. There the Society continued to worship until they succeeded in erecting their present house on D street. In this connection it should be mentioned, that among the many ministerial brethren whose labors contributed largely to their prosperity at that time, the Rev. Josiah Brackett, of Charlestown, should be held in grateful remembrance; also, that while worshipping in the latter Hall, the Society was greatly assisted by the proprietors of the place, as well as many other friends, who contributed money to the object, and otherwise gave countenance and encouragement.

The year 1839 was distinguished by the Methodists throughout the world as the "Century of Methodism." On the 29th of October, it being the day on which, just one hundred years before, Mr. Wesley formed the first Society in London,—in common with their brethren in both Europe and America, the little Society met in their place of worship to bring a thank-offering to God for the religious privileges enjoyed, and then and there was started the project, and the first subscription made, for erecting a church edifice. Eight hundred dollars were subscribed on the spot. The amount was immediately after greatly increased, so that the work was entered upon without delay, and the house finally dedicated to the worship of God the 17th day of June following, by a sermon from Father Taylor. The house has since undergone repairs, by which it is made much more commodious and provided with a large vestry.

It will in future be designated "Centenary Chapel," as the project of erecting it was started at the centenary meeting in 1839. The name will serve as a perpetual memorial of the historical associations, and will be graven on a marble slab and placed on the front of the Church.

The following clergymen have been successively appointed to the pulpit since the house was built. The late Rev. James Mudge was the pastor at the time it was built, and rendered efficient service.

Z. B. C. Dunham, 1 year. J. A. Savage, 2 years. J. W. Merrill, 1 year. J. Whitman, 2 years. G. F. Pool, 2 years. H. V. Degen, 2 years. Rev. Edward Cook, 2 years. Rev. James Porter, 2 years. Rev. David Sherman, 1 year. Rev. J. I. P. Collyer, 2 years.

#### *Universalist Church.*

In the spring of the year 1830, a Universalist Church and Society was formed in South Boston. Soon after the Church was gathered, the members secured the services of Rev. Benjamin Whittemore, who was then residing in Troy, N. Y. They occupied Harding's Hall, now used only as a club room, and situated over the store of Charles Mead, druggist, on the corner of Turnpike and Fourth streets. This hall was small, but accommodated the congregation.

In the winter of 1832, the Society decided to erect a place of worship, and selected, as a site, the corner of B street and Broadway. On the 10th of April, 1833, the edifice was dedicated and Mr. Whittemore was installed. The Church gradually increased in numbers. In April, 1843, Mr. Whittemore was dismissed to respond to a call from the Church in Lancaster, Mass.

In May, 1844, Rev. Theodore D. Cook was chosen his successor, but finally removed to Providence, R. I. Rev. Calvin Damon was his successor, and was followed by Rev. W. W. Dean, in 1856, and he is the present pastor.

The Universalist Church is a neat edifice, about seventy feet in length, on B street, with a front of fifty feet on Broadway, surmounted by a cupola. It is a wooden building with a brick basement, which latter is occupied by a large vestry and two commodious stores. The furniture and interior ornaments are neat, and well adapted to the comfort and convenience of the speaker and congregation, the Church having been thoroughly repaired and remodelled just before Mr. Dean's settlement.

### *Broadway Unitarian Society.*

In the year 1844, quite a number of persons connected with the Hawes Place Church felt the necessity of having a Unitarian Church on "the other side of the hill." The Hawes Church was situated so far from the western part of South Boston, that many persons of the Unitarian persuasion found it inconvenient or impossible to go over the hill to church. Accordingly they petitioned for an act of incorporation, and the "BROADWAY UNITARIAN CHURCH AND SOCIETY" was duly organized on the 9th of June, 1845. The services were held in Pike Hall, over Briard & Breck's dry goods store on Broadway, between B and C streets.

About this time, Rev. Moses G. Thomas, who had been previously settled in Concord, N. H., began to preach for the Broadway Church, and on the 21st of May, 1846, he was duly installed Pastor of the Church. The sermon on the occasion was preached

by Rev. E. S. Gannett, D. D. In April, 1846, the Society secured Lyceum Hall for a place of worship, and for some time occupied that spacious hall, which is capable of seating some seven hundred persons.

Among the pleasant incidents which have marked the history of this Church, may be mentioned a gift of the vessels suited to Baptismal and Communion services, and an elegant folio copy of the Holy Scriptures, from several gentlemen connected with the Hawes Place Church. Mr. Thomas, during his residence in South Boston, was very active in visiting and assisting the poor, and was much beloved. In August, 1848, he received a call from the Second Unitarian Church in New Bedford, and accepted. The Church and Society very much regretted the loss of Mr. Thomas and his accomplished lady, and several valuable testimonials of affection were presented to Mr. and Mrs. Thomas. Among other things was a beautiful diamond bed-quilt, bearing on each square the name of some one of his Church in South Boston.

Rev. Edward Squire was installed in November, 1852, and left the next April.

Jan. 28, 1855, the Church suspended operations.

### *Church of St. Peter and St. Paul.*

The corner stone of this massive Church was laid in 1844. It was designed to accommodate the increasing number of Catholics in South Boston. The Church, as originally built, was sixty-one and a half feet in front, and one hundred and six feet deep. It was designed by Gridley J. F. Bryant, Esq., and was a fine specimen of architecture. The interior was ornamented in the most beautiful manner. The wax figure, the "Dead Christ," which excited much

admiration previously when on exhibition in Boston, was purchased by the Church and placed over the altar. A magnificent organ, valued at \$3000, was also purchased by the Society and used in the devotional exercises.

On the night of the 7th of September, 1848, flames were discovered issuing from the tower of this splendid Church. At the time, there was a large fire in Sea street, which occupied the attention of the firemen, and before they could return, the Church was in a full blaze. Nothing could be done to save the edifice, and in three hours the building was a mass of smouldering ruins, nothing remaining but the bare walls. Soon after the fire commenced, a portion of the tower fell into the building, leaving the remainder in such a position that it was thought it must soon fall. The firemen and spectators were therefore obliged to keep at some distance while the fire lasted. When the roof fell in, a shower of sparks rose in every direction, with burning firebrands in great profusion. Nearly every house between A and B streets took fire on the roof, while the steeple of the Orthodox Church was badly burned.

The cause of this fire was never ascertained. It is supposed, however, to have been caused by spontaneous combustion.

Since that time the Church has been rebuilt in the form of a T, and is capable of seating six hundred more persons than before. Rev. P. F. Lyndon is Priest.

### *Payson Church.*

This Church was organized in July, 1845. The place of worship is in "Broadway Hall," at the corner of Broadway and B street. The Rev. Joy H.

Fairchild, formerly pastor of the Church in Exeter, N. H., was installed pastor on the 19th of November, 1845, and still retains that office.

*Free Will Baptist Church.*

About the year 1838, a clergyman named Jackson, from Nova Scotia, visited South Boston and preached as a candidate before the South Baptist Church, which was then destitute of a settled pastor. The Church seemed at first much united in his favor, but soon some dissatisfaction arose, as already mentioned, and in three months the feeling ran so high that when the proprietors of pews voted not to give him a call, those in favor of his settlement decided to withdraw from the Church and form a new one under his charge. This was done, and an Independent Calvinistic Baptist Church was founded, having for its pastor Rev. Mr. Jackson, an Englishman by birth, and belonging to no Association.

The meetings of the new Church were held in Harding's Hall, on Turnpike street; but by a united effort, the society erected the meeting-house on the corner of C and Fourth streets, familiarly known as the "White Pines." This was dedicated in 1838, on which occasion Mr. Jackson, who was a man of singular speech and manner, preached a sermon, taking for his text the Declaration of Independence, and announcing that it might be found in Faneuil Hall.

After a few months, Mr. Jackson disavowed Calvinistic Baptist principles, and became a Universalist. He preached in the pulpits of several of the churches of this denomination in the vicinity, and then becoming unpopular, he removed to Philadelphia, where he became an Episcopal Methodist. His "life," which was published about the time of his

residence in South Boston, is a unique affair, and shows the character of the man.

After the apostacy of Mr. Jackson from the Baptist creed, a portion of his Church returned to the old Society, while the remainder formed the first Free Will Baptist Church in South Boston. Mr. Jackson was never a Free Will Baptist, and yet the dissension which resulted from the attempt to settle him in South Boston caused the formation of a Society of that persuasion.

The Rev. S. Robbins, in 1839, came from Charlestown, and organized the newly-formed Church. Rev. R. W. Reed was settled as their pastor, and remained until September, 1842. This was during the "Second Advent" excitement,—and that doctrine gained so far on Mr. Reed and his Church, that those who still retained their *former views* thought proper to withdraw, and were organized into a Church September 20, 1842, hiring Brooks's Hall, Broadway, for a chapel, and employed a Mr. Charles Morgan (a licentiate), as their pastor, until April, 1843. From this time until November, of the same year, they were supplied with preaching by transient preachers, such as could be the most readily obtained. In November, 1843, Rev. W. H. Littlefield was called to be their pastor. He accepted the call, and was soon after ordained. He did not remain quite a year with them. At the time he was settled, the Society hired the Chapel on C and Fourth streets—and continued to worship in it until April, 1846.

Rev. G. D. Garland succeeded him, and continued pastor of the Church until it had become so reduced in numbers, by removals and otherwise, that it was thought expedient to suspend public worship for a season. The Church, however, continued to hold

weekly evening prayer meetings at the houses of the members until May, 1847, when they again hired Brooks's Hall, and had preaching by such as they could procure from Sabbath to Sabbath, until September of the same year, when Rev. E. Tuttle was invited to come amongst them, and accepted the invitation.—No public meetings, it is believed, are now held.

### *City Point Chapel.*

It being deemed desirable to have a place of worship at the Point, and where a Sabbath School could be gathered, a movement was made to collect the required funds for the purpose. The South Baptist Church took the lead in the matter, and on August 6th, 1854, a very neat and commodious Chapel was dedicated, Rev. Mr. Bosworth preaching the sermon. It is 50 feet long, 31 feet wide, and 30 feet high, and cost \$2,300.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

### MATTAPAN LITERARY ASSOCIATION—BLIND, ASYLUM— SCHOOL FOR IDIOTS.

THE importance of a Literary Association for the benefit of the young men of South Boston was for many years felt by a portion of our citizens, and several times attempts were made to establish, permanently, such an institution. These endeavors, however, proved abortive, till the spring of 1848. About this time a young man wrote several articles for the Gazette, on the advantages to be derived



from a Literary Association, as also on the feasibility of instituting a society for young men in South Boston. These articles attracted the attention of the community, and so aroused the young men that on the 18th of April, 1848, a few of them met in council, and decided to call a more general meeting.

Accordingly, on the 15th of May, a preliminary meeting of those favorable to the formation of a society for literary improvement was held at the counting room of John P. Monks, Esq. A large number responded, and a Committee was chosen to draft a constitution and to call another meeting when they should be prepared to report. On the 23d of May, they met at the Vestry of the Phillips Church to hear the report of the Committee. The Constitution proposed by them was adopted, and we give the first two or three articles as showing the design of the society.

“Article I. This Association shall be called the MATTAPAN LITERARY ASSOCIATION.

“Article II. The object of this Association shall be the mutual improvement of its members in literary accomplishments, as Declamation, Composition, and Debate.

“Article III. The government of this Association shall be vested in a President, Vice-President, Treasurer and five Directors, who together shall constitute an Executive Committee.”

The names of the original members, at the foundation of the Association, are as follows:—

Benjamin Pope, F. H. Jenney, Judah Baker, Jr., Charles H. Loring, J. W. Hildreth, William S. Thatcher, Henry A. Drake, W. H. Colburn, J. H. Crane, E. J. Whiton, G. S. Dexter, Daniel B. Curtis, S. W. Goodhue, J. W. Blanchard, Jr., F. A. Nicker-

son, W. R. Barker, Benjamin Thayer, W. A. Brabner, N. P. Mann, Jr., B. E. Corlew, W. J. Monks.

The Association chose the following board of officers for the first year:—

DANIEL B. CURTIS, President.

GEORGE S. DEXTER, Vice-President.

BENJAMIN POPE, Secretary.

STEPHEN W. GOODHUE, Treasurer.

For the better accomplishment of the objects of the society, Sub-Committees are appointed on each of the exercises, and on them is laid the responsibility of providing contributions for the occasion. The meetings of the Association are held on every Monday evening.

On the evening of the 17th of January, 1849, the Mattapans gave a public literary entertainment at Lyceum Hall. The Hall was crowded to its utmost capacity, and the gratification expressed by the delighted audience could not but prove encouraging to the young men of the society. The exercises consisted of Declamation and the reading of Compositions. The following was the Programme on the occasion:—

Introductory Address, by James D. Russell. Poem, by Benjamin Pope. Declamation—Curse of the Doge of Venice, by William A. Brabner. Composition, Charles W. Dexter. Declamation, Matthew Sprague, Jr. Declamation, Henry A. Drake. Composition, Samuel H. Jenks, Jr. Declamation, Benjamin E. Cole and Stephen B. Bowles. Composition, Stephen W. Goodhue. Declamation, John W. Blanchard, Jr. Dialogue, Court Scene, from the Merchant of Venice—B. E. Cole, M. Sprague, Jr., J. W. Blanchard, Jr., Charles H. Loring, S. B. Bowles, W. J. Monks, H. A. Drake.

The exhibitions have been continued from year to year, and have added much to the reputation and interest of the Association, which is now in a very prosperous condition, and numbers about one hundred and twenty-five young men, many of them persons of excellent talents and sterling worth. The young men of South Boston, those who are soon to bear the burden and heat of the day, may here be seen eagerly endeavoring to fit themselves for future usefulness. The exercises are well sustained, and the good order preserved at the meetings is proverbial. It may not be uninteresting to know the nature of the subjects the Association have discussed, and we subjoin a few.

“Ought a man to sustain the laws of his country against his conscience?”

“Ought capital punishment to be abolished?”

“Which is the most influential,—the press or the pulpit?”

“Has our legislature pursued a judicious course in chartering so many rail-roads?”

“Would the dissolution of the Union hasten the abolition of slavery?”

All these subjects are matters of great importance, and it cannot but be pleasing to see the young men of South Boston thus engaged in fitting themselves for the important duties of public life.

The Constitution provides that any young man of good moral character, who has attained the age of sixteen years, upon being recommended by a member of the Association, may become a member, by subscribing the Constitution and paying assessments.

The Association has a fine Library of about 2000 volumes, the value of which to the young men cannot be over-estimated.

The following is a list of the persons who have acted as President of the Association.

From June 1st, 1848, to June 1st, 1849,	—	DANIEL B. CURTIS.
“ “ “ 1849, “ “ 1850,	—	GEORGE S. DEXTER.
“ “ “ 1850, “ “ 1851,	—	HENRY A. DRAKE.
“ “ “ 1851, “ “ 1852,	—	H. A. DRAKE.
“ “ “ 1852, “ “ 1853,	—	BENJAMIN POPE.
“ “ “ 1853, “ “ 1854,	—	HORACE SMITH.
“ “ “ 1854, “ “ 1855,	—	SEWALL C. COBB.
“ “ “ 1855, “ “ 1856,	—	LUTHER L. WHITE.
“ “ “ 1856, “ “ 1857,	—	BENJAMIN POPE.
“ “ “ 1857,	—	DANIEL B. CURTIS.

We cannot close this sketch without mentioning that the person through whose endeavors the Association was founded, and who still remains an active member of the society, was Mr. Benjamin Pope. We conclude with an extract from his Poem, on “Self-Conceit,” read at the first public Exercise of the Mattapan Literary Association.

“Fair Mattapan, ’tis from yon glorious height  
 We view the treasures of thy varied shore,  
 And gather there the gems of hidden ore  
 That Clio spreads before our mental sight.  
 Thy thirst for science, like thy zeal for right  
 When Freedom waver’d ’mid the battle’s roar,  
 Has seen Association nobly soar,  
 To add to Learning, Friendship’s sweet delight!  
 Be this our pride and pleasure, to behold  
 The grasping spirit of the youthful mind  
 Explore those mines of literary gold,  
 That ardent souls by perseverance find.  
 ’Tis then that our time honored Heights shall be  
 The proudest beacons of our liberty.”

*Perkins Institution for the Blind.*

In the year 1829, an act incorporating the Trustees of the New England Asylum for the Blind was passed by the Legislature of Massachusetts. Soon after the passage of this act, Dr. Samuel G. Howe was despatched to Europe to visit the various institutions for the blind in that part of the world, and to gather from them such information as would be necessary to establish a similar institution in Boston. In 1832, he returned, accompanied by a most accomplished young blind man, who had been educated at the Paris Institution for the Blind, and who was well versed in the classics, in history, in mathematics, and knew the secret of being able to impart his knowledge to others. A blind mechanic was also procured from Edinburgh, to teach different kinds of work.

Having thus made the most extensive preparations, the experiment was tried in July, 1832. Six blind persons from different parts of the State, varying in age from six to twenty years, were taken at random, and immediately placed under the instruction of the blind teachers. Books with raised letters were printed for their use, and in six months they were able to read correctly with their fingers the volumes that had been prepared. An exhibition of their acquirement was made before the Legislature of Massachusetts, and the result was so satisfactory, that an appropriation of \$6000 from the funds of the State was immediately made, on condition that twenty poor blind persons from Massachusetts should be educated free of cost at the Institution.

Exhibitions were also made before the public, and they awakened the community to the duty of pro-

viding a suitable establishment for the education of the Blind. Considerable sums of money were collected, and the Institution was immediately placed on a firm basis. Among the most liberal donors was Thomas H. Perkins, who gave his mansion-house in Pearl street, as a residence for the Blind. In one month, fifty thousand dollars were raised, and placed to the credit of the Institution. Exhibitions were afterwards made in all the New England States, and in several of the Middle and Western States, and the appeal in favor of the blind was answered by an appropriation of \$1000 per annum for twelve years by the State of Connecticut; \$500 by New Hampshire, and \$1200 for ten years by Vermont.

As music is the field which seems to offer to the blind the fairest competition with *clairvoyans*, Lowell Mason, Esq., was engaged to instruct the pupils in the art of using the voice in singing, and also the piano forte and organ. Arithmetic, history and geography occupied the attention of the blind, and they were also taught to make mats, different kinds of basket work, and mattresses.

During the year 1834, a printing press and a complete set of types were procured, and during that year the Acts of the Apostles was printed. The next year, the foundation of a band of music was laid, and since that time the male pupils have practised upon the clarionet, flute, horn, violin, violincello and bass viol; and are now enabled to play in a manner which would do credit to any orchestra. The pupils were also instructed in writing, and sent by mail very legible letters to their friends.

In the early part of the year 1839, the Mount Washington House, in South Boston, built a few years previously at a cost of \$110,000 for a hotel, was

offered to the Trustees in exchange for the estate in Pearl street. This important step was taken after long and careful deliberation, and after obtaining a special vote of the Corporation.

The terms of the transaction were an even exchange of the land and buildings in Pearl street, for the lot on which the Mount Washington House is situated, with all its buildings, being an inclosure of 55,000 feet, and also a lot situated on the opposite side of Broadway, containing 20,000 feet. The removal of the establishment presented an opportunity of connecting the name of Mr. Perkins perpetually with the Institution, and accordingly a vote of the Corporation changed the name to that of the "PERKINS INSTITUTION AND MASSACHUSETTS ASYLUM FOR THE BLIND." In May, the inmates were removed, and the expense incurred by the removal was paid by several benevolent gentlemen, one of whom, Samuel Appleton, contributed one thousand dollars.

At the same time the Institution was presented with an organ valued at three thousand dollars, on condition that the name of the donor should be concealed. Accidental circumstances, however, disclosed it, and "Presented by George Lee" is engraved on a tablet placed on the front of the organ which stands in the Exhibition Hall.

Since that time the Institution has increased rapidly in numbers and usefulness. Various improvements have been made in the building, and every thing which could be done to render the establishment useful as a place of instruction for those deprived of the blessing of sight, has been accomplished.

In 1849, an excellent workshop for the use of the Blind was erected directly in front of the Mount Washington House, on the Old Road. This build-

ing, which cost more than \$10,000, is three stories high, and is arranged to accommodate all the different trades in which those deprived of sight can engage. Here are manufactured mattresses of every description, filled with hair, husks, palm-leaf and cotton. Pew cushions, sofas and couches are also stuffed, while vast quantities of mats are made in looms, constructed expressly for this establishment. In the cellar is a steam engine designed to supply steam for the cleansing of feathers. The hair for mattresses is also here taken in its raw state, and prepared for use. These blind workmen likewise manufacture the celebrated fibre mats now so much in use.

Intimately associated with the name of the Asylum for the Blind in South Boston, is that of Laura Bridgman, whose peculiar condition, as regards the loss of bodily senses, has attracted the attention and awakened the sympathy of the humane through the whole civilized world. During the twenty years since she entered the Asylum, most of our citizens have become familiar with her personal appearance, either in the streets or in the exhibition room, and all are acquainted with the fact that she has from earliest childhood been entirely blind, deaf, and dumb, and almost deprived of the sense of smell. They all know, too, the proficiency she has made, under these deprivations, in the different branches of study. It is considered unnecessary, therefore, to record here a particular account of her, further than to present to the reader a few items of her early history, which were recorded by Dr. Howe on her first entrance. In his sixth annual report, published early in 1838, the year after her admission (at the age of eight years), he writes of her as follows:—



“Laura was born of intelligent and respectable parents, in Hanover, N. H. When a mere infant, she was subject to very painful and dangerous ‘fits,’ the nature of which does not seem to have been well understood. Until twenty months old, though a pretty and interesting child, she was weak and fragile—a breath would have blown out the flame; but at that age she began to rally; her health seemed firmly established; her mental faculties rapidly developed themselves, and when she attained her second year she was more intelligent and sprightly than common children; she could already prattle some words, and had mastered the difference between A and B. But in a month after her sky was again overcast; she sickened and came near unto death; the disease, however, seemed to be baffled within, and to have fastened upon the external organs of sense, and in five weeks it was perceived that her sight and hearing were forever destroyed. During seven weeks of pain and fever she tasted not a morsel of food; for five months she was obliged to be kept in a darkened room; it was a year before she could walk unsupported, and two years before she could sit up all day. She was now four years old, and as her health and strength began to be established, she learned to go about the house and manifested a desire to be employed; not by her looks, for she was blind—not by words, for she was dumb. She could, it is true, for a time pronounce the few words she had before learned; but not hearing the *sound of her own voice*, she soon lost the command of her articulation—the sound answered not to the thought—the will lost command of the tongue—and the last articulate word she was ever heard to utter, was ‘book!’ But she was not only deaf, and dumb, and blind, her isolation was still more

complete—the sense of smell was so blunted as to be entirely useless, and only affected by pungent odors; of course, half the pleasure of taste was gone, and she manifested indifference about the flavor of food.

“It would seem that in this total darkness—this dreary stillness—this isolation from all communication with kindred spirits, the immaterial mind must have remained in infantile imbecility, while the body grew in stature and strength, or have attained a perception of its loneliness, only to pine and die at the discovery. But not so; every day she became more active and more cheerful; and she is now (as far as the closest scrutiny can ascertain the state of her mind) not only unrepining, but contented and happy. The sense of touch alone remains, and the sight of this unfortunate girl fills one with admiration, not only of the perfection of the senses, but of the wonderful power of the mind to adapt its operations to any circumstances of its bodily tenement—to put itself in relation with external things, and to obtain its own stimuli and manifest its own emotions through the most imperfect media.

“There is the strongest evidence of a thirst for knowledge—of an internal, intellectual want which can be gratified only by a new idea. Her greatest pleasure is to learn a new stitch—a new way of knitting or braiding—a new word—or to discover the application and use of any new thing; and her eagerness to learn is only equalled by the quickness of perception which she manifests.

“There is strong hope that, if her life is spared, the patient and persevering efforts of the humane, aided by the ingenuity and councils of the wise, will succeed in throwing much light into her dreary pri-

son, and be rewarded not only by the satisfaction of imparting happiness, but by new views of the operations of mind."

It is gratifying to be able to state that the hope here so feelingly expressed has not been disappointed. (See Appendix H.)

*Massachusetts School for Idiots.*

This institution is also located in South Boston, and occupies a large building at City Point.

The school is under the superintendence of Dr. S. G. Howe, and the house under the immediate supervision of Mrs. McDonald and her son. The house contains a reception-room, parlor, dining-room, school-rooms, sleeping-rooms, &c. There are at present in the school 51 scholars, boys and girls, ranging from the ages of 7 to 15 years, all in excellent health, and to all appearances much attached to their teachers, who are very attentive to the wants of these unfortunate children. At five o'clock, all the year round, they rise, and retire in winter at 7 o'clock, and in summer at 8 o'clock. The larger boys occupy a room by themselves, and the girls and smaller boys a separate one. Each sleeping-room has an ante-room attached to it, in which an attendant sleeps, and a bathing-room, where the children are bathed every morning. They breakfast at half past six, dine at twelve, and sup at five o'clock. Belonging to the school, in another building, is a spacious gymnasium, where the scholars are exercised every day. The children are in the school-room six hours a day, and are instructed, those who have the power of speech, in reading and writing—the others in form, color, size, &c. The girls are also instructed in needlework.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## STREETS.

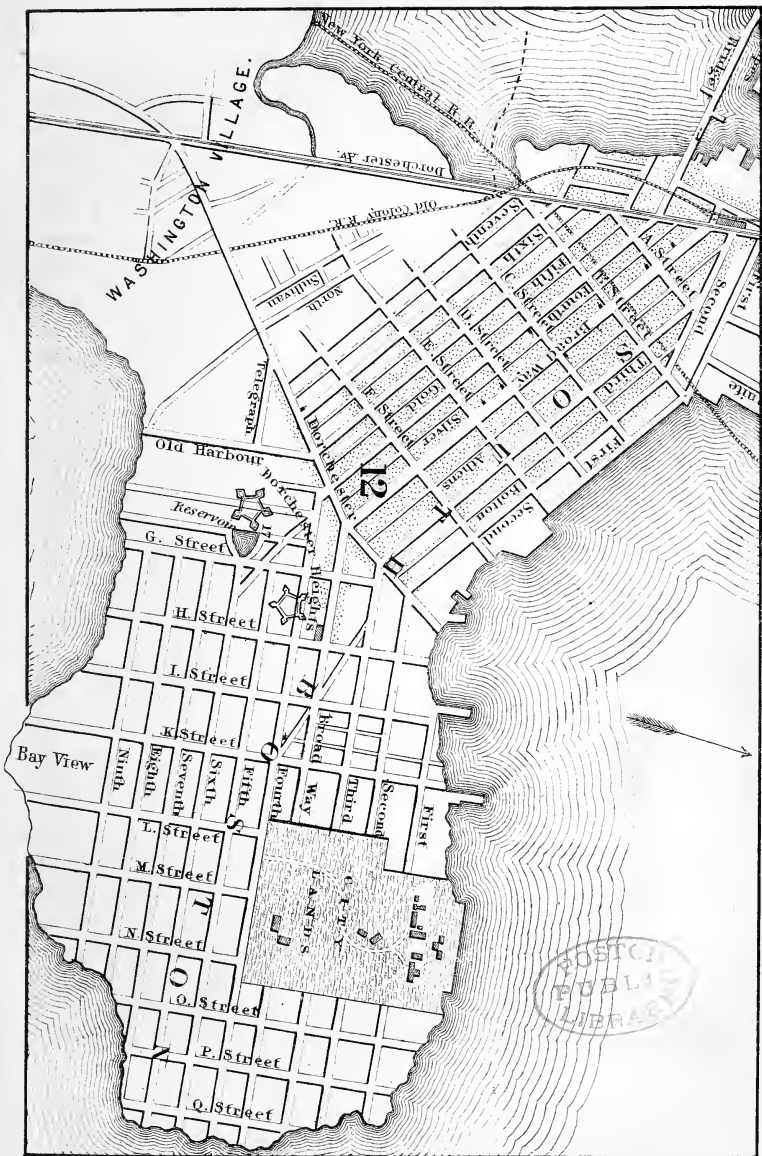
THE laying out of streets at Mattapanock received little or no attention previous to its annexation to the town of Boston. The main pathway from Dorchester to the Point, which was originally trodden by the Mattapan cattle in going daily to and from their pasture, had in the course of time become a public street; but the proprietors or owners of the land, who do not seem always to have fully agreed with the town authorities in regard to keeping this street and its fences in repair, held the "pasture" itself in common till the year 1718. At their meeting, held November 26th, of that year, a vote was passed to fence their several lots, but nothing seems to have been done respecting any passage way or street besides the said "Causeway over to Dorchester Neck," which was then represented to be "defective and out of repair." The plan of Mattapanock, drawn in 1776, by the British General Howe, and which has been engraved for this work, shows that little change had then been made in the public highways of the place. In 1804, as stated in a previous chapter, many acres of land at Dorchester Neck had been purchased by several distinguished and wealthy citizens of Boston, and the project of annexing the Neck to the latter place was started by them, and warmly advocated or opposed by others according as they were interested in the matter. We find that the people of Boston proposed, as one of the first conditions of annexation, that their Selectmen should have liberty, without compensation to the

land-owners, to lay out all necessary "streets, public squares and market places." It would seem that the want of this foresight in their ancestors, which then made and which still makes the streets of Boston more crooked and irregular than those of almost any other city, was beginning to be understood and felt. At all events they were determined, as shown by their proceedings in this instance, to secure for their descendants, in the city which might grow up over the then fair fields and verdant pastures of Mattapanock, the blessing of regular, wide and commodious streets. This condition was accordingly introduced into the Act of Annexation passed by the Legislature; and to show that it had reference to the future, rather than to the present, it was likewise provided that the town of Boston should not be obliged to complete the streets thus laid out, sooner than the Selectmen might deem expedient. A plan of the streets was very soon after drawn by Mr. Mather Withington, a distinguished surveyor of Dorchester; and after various meetings of the Selectmen of Boston and the proprietors of South Boston lands, it was approved by all parties, and the Selectmen proceeded formally in February, 1805, to lay out the streets. Those thus agreed upon and laid out were, as far as they went, and in their general arrangement, nearly the same as we now find them.

First, Dorchester street was to run from the old Causeway road, at the division line between Dorchester and Boston, north 63 degrees east, not to the water as at present, but to Broadway. It was to be 80 feet wide. From the northerly end of Dorchester street they marked out a noble avenue, destined to be one of the finest streets in our city, and now the pride of our peninsula. It was to run

“southerly  $84\frac{1}{2}$  degrees east to the sea or salt water, and northerly 24 degrees west until it meets the line of the Turnpike,” also 80 feet wide, and was called BROADWAY. North of this, and parallel thereto, were our present First, Second and Third streets,—a large portion of the westerly end of the first one not then reclaimed from the salt water. These were each 50 feet wide, and varying from  $310\frac{3}{4}$  to 220 feet distant from Broadway and from each other. Southward of Broadway, and commencing at and running westerly from Dorchester street, were four streets, parallel to Broadway, reaching to the Turnpike, and thence bending in a direction parallel with the line of South Boston Bridge to the sea. These were then and are still called Fourth, Fifth, Sixth and Seventh streets; they were to be 250 feet from each other, and the one nearest to Broadway 276 feet therefrom. On the easterly side of Dorchester street, besides the streets mentioned, numerically named,—were Eighth and Ninth streets, making six streets here south of Broadway, parallel to it, each 50 feet wide, and 250 feet from each other. These streets were to extend easterly to the water, some of them reaching it by passing on the northerly and some on the southerly side of the Heights, and some traversing over them and extending to the Point.

Intersecting these, and forming cross streets, were laid out six public ways west of Dorchester street, beginning 500 feet from the Turnpike, and running exactly at right angles across Broadway, all to be 500 feet apart, 50 feet wide, and reaching from the Dorchester boundary line north to the sea. East of Dorchester street, and also at right angles with Broadway, were ten other streets, 50 feet wide, and







from 376 to 680 feet apart—all running from the salt water on the south—some of them across the Heights—to Boston harbor on the north. All these were designated by the letters of the alphabet—A street being the first from the Turnpike, and Q street at the Point near the water. In addition, were two short streets near Dorchester street,—one running parallel with the cross streets and called Old Harbor street, the other at right angles with them and called Telegraph street.

Such was the original plan of the streets as agreed upon by the Selectmen of Boston and the proprietors. In 1809, the latter by deed appropriated to public use certain additional streets. A plan of them was made by Stephen Badlam, Esq., which plan, together with the deed, was deposited in the Suffolk Registry of Deeds office. By this deed, Dorchester street was continued north to the water, and some change was made in the course of Fourth street from Dorchester to G street. But the principal feature of the deed was the laying out the twenty-foot streets, as they have been called, which were marked in the plan half way between the existing lengthwise streets—viz., between First and Second, between Second and Third, &c., to Seventh street. This deed was signed by thirty-eight proprietors of South Boston lands—Gardiner Greene's name being at the head of the list.

Soon after the Selectmen had laid out the streets in 1805, the proprietors had a plan of them printed, and made use of it in their sales of land. They continued to use it for many years, and very little attention seems to have been paid to the matter by the town authorities. No deviations from the original plan were authorized by the Selectmen, yet it

was found that encroachments had gradually been made upon the streets, and their original location was in some instances changed. In consequence of this, and many doubts existing as to the correctness of the printed plan alluded to, a petition by Jonathan Hunnewell and others was presented in 1825 to the Mayor and Aldermen, requesting that a surveyor be appointed to "ascertain the true bounds and levels of the streets, by comparing the true with the printed plan." The year following, a committee on the subject reported that the matter was deserving attention, and accompanying their report was a resolution that Mather Withington and S. P. Fuller be employed to compare the plans and report the variations, and to suggest measures for reconciling the differences—also to ascertain the expense of "affixing monuments of cedar posts at the corners of the several streets," and of deciding upon their relative elevations. The report was accepted, but no part of the measures recommended was probably complied with.

About this time the original plan of Mr. Withington was lost. Fortunately, he was still living, though quite aged, and he was employed by the Mayor of Boston to draw another plan of the streets as originally laid out. This was furnished by Mr. Withington, and is in possession of the City as an attested copy of Mr. W.'s original minutes. In 1828, when the North Free Bridge was completed, it became necessary to open a new street from the south end of it to Dorchester Turnpike, which was accordingly done, and the new opening called Turnpike street. In 1831, the Board of Aldermen ordered that Second street, parts of which bordered on the northerly shore, "be made passable from

Turnpike to Dorchester streets," and in 1836 this street was filled up and graded its whole length.

In 1837, an important movement was made in regard to the streets. In consequence of supposed encroachments upon the public highways, arising from the sales of land by the unauthorized plan already referred to, and from other causes, a committee was appointed by the City government to cause a new survey of the streets to be executed, conforming as nearly as practicable to the plan of Mr. Withington. Messrs. Stephen P. Fuller and Alexander Wadsworth, well known surveyors of Boston, were accordingly employed, and made an actual survey—and the plan was drawn and completed by Mr. Wadsworth in 1841. It appeared by this survey that encroachments had been made upon the public streets in almost every part of South Boston where buildings or fences had been put up; and also that the location of some of the streets had been changed materially from the original plan, particularly in the distances between the streets crossing Broadway, from A to F, and in the northerly termination of First, Second, Third and Fifth streets, and the easterly termination of A street. Mr. Wadsworth's plan, however, did not conform strictly to the original one, but adopted some of these changes; yet according to it the encroachments were quite numerous, and in 1844 the City Marshal was directed to notify the individuals and corporations concerned of their existence, and that the City claimed full right to remove them from the premises whenever it should be deemed expedient to complete the streets. The list of encroachments, according to Mr. Wadsworth's plan, then made out and published, numbered no less than nineteen east of Dorchester street, and eighty-six west

of it. Some of these have since been wholly or partially remedied, and others still remain in the same state.

Besides this new survey, much was needed to be done in regard to the streets in South Boston. The population was continually increasing, the taxes raised in the Ward were augmenting, and complaints were becoming frequent that the City was spending far less upon the streets, for the comfort and convenience of our citizens, than they were fairly entitled to claim. In consequence of this and other alleged grievances, a public meeting was held in 1847, and a committee appointed to memorialize the City Government upon the subject. This was faithfully and ably done by the Committee, and 750 copies of the Memorial presented by them were ordered by the City Council to be printed. (See Appendix I.)

This Memorial was not without its effect upon the City authorities. The southerly fort, on what was called Dorchester Heights, was soon after purchased by the City, at an expense of \$112,000, and laid out for the use of the public forever. It has since been beautified with grass plats, gravel walks, and shade trees, is enclosed with an iron fence, and its summit affords one of the finest prospects in the United States.

The construction of public sewers, which had already been commenced in the more thickly-settled places, was afterwards prosecuted with vigor. In 1848, \$1500 were expended upon a sewer in Dorchester and Second streets; in 1849, \$1400 upon sewers in Broadway and Fourth streets; in 1852, was laid a sewer in the lower part of Third street, costing over \$1200; in 1853, sewer in First, Second, I, and H

streets and Broadway—\$2813 48; in 1854, sewer in Fourth street, from G to Dorchester street—over \$1200. These are only a portion of the items of expense in the way of drainage, which has been carried on extensively in our streets, and has contributed to the comfort and health of our citizens.

Much has also been done in the way of paving the streets. Turnpike street was first paved, from Fourth street to the North Free Bridge. In 1849 Fourth street was paved from B to C street; and in 1851 and 1852, it was paved the whole of the remaining distance from Turnpike to Dorchester street. Broadway was begun upon in 1850, and paved from B to D street; in 1851, from Dorchester to E; in 1852, from D to E, and also from Turnpike to B; and in 1853, from Dorchester to K. In 1854 and 1855, parts of A, B, C, and First and Second streets were paved. All the paving, except in Fourth street west of Dorchester Avenue, has been done with the cobble or rounded stones, with suitable crossings of flag stones.

In 1849, Fourth street was widened between Dorchester and G streets, at an expense for land damages of \$4089 20. In 1855 and 1856 First st. was completed from A to E street. In 1852, Broadway and Fourth street were graded, at an expense of \$3000. In the same year, the City Marshal was ordered to notify all owners and abutters on Broadway and Fourth streets, from Dorchester to Turnpike street, to pave their side-walks with brick or flat stones; and afterwards the Superintendent of Streets was directed to pave all which had not been done, and charge the same to those who had neglected it. In 1852, an order was passed that Quincy, Gold, Silver, Athens and Bolton streets—being a part of the twenty-foot

streets laid out by the proprietors of land in 1809—be accepted by the City. In 1856, a further order by the City Government so far modified this acceptance, that the abutters were first required to relinquish all claim upon the City for damages in regulating the grade of these streets. In 1852, on the surrender of the Dorchester Turnpike as a toll passage way by the Turnpike Corporation, the portion of it in South Boston, from Fourth street to the Dorchester line, was accepted by the City. In 1853, the owners and abutters on Broadway, between Dorchester and K streets, were directed to pave their side-walks with brick or flat stones.

The alterations which have been made, from time to time, in the grade and level of some of the streets, has been a source of much inconvenience and expense. Great changes have in this respect been made in Broadway. It has been lowered many feet between Dorchester Avenue and B street, elevated between C and D streets, and again lowered from D to F street and above Dorchester street. On the easterly side of the hill it has also been raised at different times. Strong efforts were made, a few years since, to have the knoll a little westerly of A street, in Broadway, removed by the City; but stronger remonstrances against it prevailed. Had it been done, a full view from its westerly end, up this fine avenue, for nearly three fourths of a mile, might have been enjoyed.

The "twin hills," as they are called on General Howe's projection of the "Neck," have interfered not a little with the rectangular course of some of our streets, and their continuous track across the peninsula. One of these hills, afterwards immortalized in American history as "Dorchester Heights,"

has since had a portion of its summit crowned by the water reservoir, as mentioned in another place, and new avenues around it, and new walks through its capacious and commanding Park, have been found necessary. The other has been obliged to yield, with a more ignoble result to itself, to the march of improvement, and is destined, like the less pretending Nook's Hill which it once overlooked on the west, to disappear before the peaceful but effective attack of the pickaxe and shovel. Deep excavations through it have for several years past been connecting portions of streets which it had served to separate, and none of them will much longer be obliged by it to turn aside or stop short in their regular course.

The City lands, near the Point, on which the public institutions have for many years been located, have also interfered with the orderly and convenient arrangement of the streets in that part of our ward. These, too, are in a fair way to become opened to public travel, and to afford sites for private dwellings, churches and school-houses. In 1854, the old stockade fence enclosing them was removed, and Broadway, Second and Third streets laid out through the lands and ordered to be graded. The grade of Broadway was changed, in order to preserve the beautiful elevation at this place. Some of the grounds were prepared for the market, and subsequently sold. Among the first sites which were secured in the new territory, was one for the present Baptist Chapel, which was done by a party of spirited and benevolent gentlemen of South Boston; thus placing Religion in the position which it is hoped may ever be granted to it in similar undertakings among us—that of a leader and pioneer.

In 1855, the Committee on Public Lands were required by the City Council to consider the expediency of laying out a portion of these lands for a Public Square, and were also directed to set apart from them a lot for a Market Place.

When the present plans in regard to all our streets shall be fully carried out, they will not suffer by comparison with those of our finest cities. Extensions will be needed, as the solid land is from time to time made to reach further into the water; and are even now required over the new territory which a recent annexation has transferred from Dorchester. The larger ones are also fast becoming beautified and shaded by the taste and labor of individuals and the efforts of our efficient Tree Association.

---

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### MANUFACTORIES.

SOUTH BOSTON has long been famous for its extensive manufactories. Before 1800, Dix & Brinley had Chemical Works on the shore near where Boston Wharf was afterwards built, the workmen coming over from Boston in boats. In 1811, the proprietors of the Essex street Glass Works erected large buildings on the same shore, and to supply the necessary workmen sent an agent to England. Before his return, the war with that country broke out, fuel could therefore not be obtained, and the project failed. Among the number who came over from England about this time, was our respected citizen, THOMAS CAINS, Esq. He possessed the art of mixing the



materials to make flint-glass, and understanding all the other branches of the business, prevailed upon the proprietors to put up a small six-pot flint furnace at South Boston. This was the first successful attempt of the kind in this part of the country, and Mr. C. may be considered as the father of the flint-glass business in the Atlantic States.

Without attempting to mention or trace down the many business projects which have been undertaken in South Boston, we will proceed to particularize a few of the largest now or very recently carried on here—several of which are unrivalled, in their peculiar branches, in the United States.

---

*South Boston Iron Works.*—These extensive Works have long been the pride of our Ward, and have added greatly to the growth and prosperity of this section of the city. For a more full account of them, the reader is referred to an obituary notice, in another chapter, of CYRUS ALGER, Esq., who for so many years was at their head. The Works consist of a large brick gun-shop, a moulding and casting building, a pattern and cleaning shop, with other necessary and extensive buildings—situated on Foundry street, near the westerly end of Broadway.

---

*Union Works.*—Next adjoining southerly to the South Boston Iron Company's Works, is a large manufactory which was occupied for a time successfully by Seth Wilmarth. Mr. W. made a contract for building thirty locomotives for the Erie Railroad. Some difficulty occurred in regard to the payment, which obliged him to suspend operations, and the extensive shops are now unoccupied.

*Adams's Printing Press and Machine Shop.*—

North of the buildings occupied by the South Boston Iron Company, are a number of work-shops, in external appearance not very attractive; but the productions of the workmen in them have exerted a more wide spread and beneficial influence than perhaps those of any other works in the country. We refer to the Adams Printing Press manufactory. For nearly a quarter of a century power-presses of different sizes have been sent out from this establishment, not merely to all parts of our own country, but also to the old world, where their superiority to anything of the kind there manufactured is universally admitted. The Adams Press is by far the best ever invented; indeed, it is the only one now in general use for book printing. Truly we may feel proud of having for one of our citizens such a public benefactor as Mr. Isaac Adams.

These works were commenced here in 1836, by Seth Adams, the well-known sugar refiner—a brother of Isaac—for whose inventions and improvements the printers are also much indebted.

The works have since been much enlarged, to meet the necessities of the Company. In addition to Printing Presses and other book machinery, they manufacture Sugar Mills, Steam Engines, both stationary and marine—Steam Boilers, &c. The firm give employment to from 100 to 150 men.

Mr Adams last year obtained, by a special act of Congress, an extension of his patent on the printing press; and it may be here mentioned, as a most singular as well as complimentary fact, that his petition for an extension received the aid and support of all the leading Publishers and Printers in the country.



*Isaac Adams*

PROPERTY OF THE  
MAINE GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY.  
INCORPORATED 1884.

Mr. A. has recently bought out the interest of his late partners, W. B. Dodge and G. H. Everson, and is now sole proprietor.

---

*The Fulton Iron Foundry.*—Situated on Dorchester Avenue, just at the main entrance to South Boston, is the large brick building of the Fulton Iron Foundry Company—surmounted by a cupola and bell. George C. Thacher, who with his brother Thomas Thacher and William G. Billings originated these works, and who until recently had the management of the same, was formerly connected with Mr. Cyrus Alger in the Foundry business. In 1835, having left Mr. Alger, he, in company with Thacher (Thomas) and Billings, commenced building a Foundry on the site of the present works, and in 1836 they formed themselves into a Corporation, the act for which was passed that year by the Legislature. A year had scarcely elapsed, before the original building, the success of which at the time of starting seemed to some doubtful, was found to be entirely inadequate to meet the demands made upon the Company for work, and a large addition, more extensive and commodious than the original building, was erected. In 1842, the old building, with the addition, being still too limited for the steadily increasing business, which under the successful management of Mr. George C. Thacher had accumulated to an unexpected amount, was removed, and in its place the present pleasing and appropriate structure was erected. In a few years the Company found it necessary to still further increase their facilities for supplying the demands made upon them for work, and from time to time some three extensive additions have been made, the last of which (from its

size a Foundry almost of itself) is believed to be the most substantial and convenient of the kind in the country, making the establishment one of the most perfect in the United States.

The land occupied by the Company extends over an area of upwards of three acres, bounded on the rear by the channel, affording admirable facilities for reception or delivery by water, and in the Foundry building itself may be found almost every convenience at present known for a successful fulfilment of any order for all kinds of iron castings.

The enormously large and difficult castings for the engines of the United States Steam Frigate *Saranac*, which was being constructed by Jabez Coney, were cast at this establishment, the quality and perfection of which, excited the admiration of all experienced in such matters, who had an opportunity of examining the same. The Company are now successfully prosecuting the casting of iron in all its different branches.

Mr. Thacher continued to give his undivided time and attention to these works, until about some two years since, when the state of his health, which had at times previously been feeble, admonished him to take that rest and quietude which it was hoped would restore him to his former strength and activity. But in this his friends were disappointed; he gradually declined, although he frequently visited the works, until, on the 21st of October, 1856, he departed this life, universally respected and beloved. It was truly a singular coincidence, that both Messrs. Cyrus Alger and George C. Thacher, the oldest and most experienced Iron Founders in this country, former partners and early settlers of South Boston, should both die in the same year.

*Coney's Foundry*—Was built in the fall of 1837, adjoining Mr. Adams's Works. In 1843 was commenced, here, the building of an Iron Steamer for the United States, called the McLean, which was launched in 1845. Its length was 140 feet, breadth 22 feet, depth of hold 11 feet 6 inches. Weight of the hull, complete, 275,000 pounds, and the vessel of 450 tons burthen. In 1848, Mr. Coney contracted with the United States Government to build the machinery for the War Steamer Saranac, the hull being built at the United States Navy Yard at Portsmouth, N. H. This contract was completed on the 7th day of February, 1850, since which time Mr. Coney has been confined to his house by a paralytic affection, and in consequence his business was suspended and the work shop closed.

---

*Globe Locomotive Works*.—The business was first carried on at these works by Lyman & Souther, who commenced at the corner of First and A streets in the year 1846. From this time they kept in their employ from twenty to seventy-five men, until 1849, when Mr. Souther bought of Mr. Lyman his interest in the firm, property and business, and carried on the concern alone under the style of the "Globe Works," until May 1st, 1851. Business increased so rapidly that he found it necessary to extend his facilities to be enabled to fill his orders, which he did by leasing the establishment occupied previously by Jabez Coney, in Foundry street, employing at both places some three hundred men, and manufacturing every variety of machinery of the very best quality.

In the years 1852 and 1853, Mr. Joseph R. Anderson was associated with Mr. Souther as superintendent of the work, during which time was manufactur-

ed in this shop the large Borer for the tunnelling of Hoosac Mountain. This gigantic piece of machinery is probably the largest ever constructed in New England, its weight being upwards of one hundred tons, and excited the wonder of all who examined it. In 1853, Mr. Souther greatly enlarged his premises on A street, making them extensive enough to accommodate the entire business of the Company, which was organized as an incorporated body May 1, 1854. The capital stock of the Company is \$100,000. John Souther (the original founder) was chosen President, and D. N. Pickering Treasurer. Mr. Souther is a native of South Boston, and served his apprenticeship in the place. His sterling integrity as a man, and his practical knowledge of the details of business, render him peculiarly well fitted for the position which he occupies. Mr. Pickering, the Treasurer, is also a practical machinist, having been superintendent of machinery on the Boston & Worcester Railroad, superintendent of several other Railroads, and possessing considerable experience in building and repairing railroad machinery. The business of the Company is now in a very prosperous condition, they employing about 300 men, and turning out machinery equal to \$350,000 per annum,—comprising Locomotives, Excavators, Sugar Mills, Stationery Engines, Boilers, and general machinery.

---

*Loring's Works.*—Harrison Loring is proprietor of one of our most popular establishments for the manufacture of large stationary and marine engines. He commenced the manufacture of machinery in 1847, and now employs 200 men, with every mechanical facility for increasing to 100 more. Although devoting his chief attention to stationary and marine



engines and boilers, he has built almost every variety, from a machine for making nails to a first-class steamship. Mr. Loring is a native of Duxbury, Mass., and served his apprenticeship with Mr. Jabez Coney, of South Boston. He spent one season in Cuba, superintending the erection of engines and machinery, and at the early age of 22 years commenced business on his own account, employing from 15 to 30 men the first year. Mr. Loring is both a practical and theoretical mechanic, and has been successful in every thing in this line that he has undertaken. He built the machinery of the Steamer "City of Boston," which, after construction, was purchased by the United States Government for the Pacific; and remodelled the machinery of the United States Steamer John Hancock, employed on the Japan Expedition. He was also the builder of the screw propeller "Enoch Train," rated as the fastest of her class in the country. He has recently commenced the building of Iron Steamships.

---

*The Bay State Iron Company's Works*—Situ-  
ated at City Point, employ some three hundred men,  
in the manufacture of railroad iron—being the larg-  
est and most extensive works of the kind in New  
England. The work made here is of the most supe-  
rior quality, and equals if not surpasses any other  
manufactured in the country. They are under the gen-  
eral superintendence of Ralph Crooker, long and fa-  
vorably known as Superintendent of the Boston Iron  
Company Works. John H. Reed is Treasurer of  
the Company. The mills are kept in operation con-  
tinually, day and night, and the buildings connected  
with the works are fire-proof and cover several acres  
of land. The process of rolling the iron is one of

the most interesting to visitors presented in any of our manufactories. The facility and speed with which the rails are made is truly wonderful.

---

*The Wire Works.*—The bright flame throwing its glare over the sky, night after night, issuing from the wire works on Dorchester Avenue, attracts the attention of the stranger in visiting our city. Here one of the most novel and curious spectacles is presented to the visitor. The hammering of the iron into bars and drawing it into wire is here done, and a large number of operatives are employed day and night in this work. The works were founded and carried on for several years by Henry S. Washburn, but have lately passed into the hands of Naylor & Co.

---

*Alger & Reed's Forge*—Is located adjoining. Here are forged the largest of anchors, and other forgings, there being in the works one of the heaviest hammers now in use. The work from this establishment is of the highest order. Under the style of the "Forge," Messrs. Alger & Reed conducted these works until the death of the senior partner, Cyrus Alger, Jr., when Edward Reed undertook the management of them. The concern has lately passed into the hands of Francis Alger.

---

*Ship-Building.*—Although we believe Lot Wheelwright was first in the field of ship-building in South Boston, previous to 1822, still it was not until that year that much was done in this line. Capt. Noah Brooks then came from the Eastward, and set up a yard at the foot of F street. Here for years he

kept a large number of men at work. He was also very active in laboring for the good of the Ward, and his memory will always be gratefully cherished by those who knew him. He met with a sad death in January, 1852, by being thrown from his sleigh.

The barque Edward Fletcher was built by Capt. B., and was launched from back of the Forts, fully rigged.

The well known ship-builders, E. & H. Briggs, were for a time in company with Noah Brooks in the business, but the partnership was dissolved in 1847, and the Messrs. Briggs soon afterwards removed to the Point, since which time they have built the following ships:—

Newton, of	450	tons	burthen.
Reliance,	450	"	"
Oxenbridge,	580	"	"
Mary Glover,	650	"	"
Berkshire,	650	"	"
Southern Cross,	1000	"	"
Northern Light,	1050	"	"
Cape Cod,	850	"	"
Winged Arrow,	1150	"	"
Meteor,	1150	"	"
Golden Light,	1150	"	"
John Land,	1150	"	"
Bonita,	1150	"	"
Cyclone,	1150	"	"
Boston Light,	1180	"	"
Star Light,	1180	"	"
Grace Darling,	1240	"	"
Saracen,	1300	"	"
Cossack,	600	"	"
Vitula,	1185	"	"
Mameluke,	1300	"	"

Fair Wind,	1300	tons	burthen.
Alarm,	1200	"	"
Joseph Peabody,	1200	"	"
Asa Eldridge,	1300	"	"

Besides which, they now have two ships on the stocks, one of 800, and the other of 1000 tons burthen.

The reputation of the Messrs. Briggs is very high, and their clippers have made some of the quickest passages on record.

---

*American Flint Glass Works.*—Among the many busy scenes of manufacture located in South Boston, there is none of more interest than the Glass Works situated on Second street, owned by P. F. Slane. In April, 1843, he commenced work in the old glass-house of the South Boston Glass Company, and gradually extending and enlarging his operations, he had attained a high position, had won for himself and his work an enviable reputation, and worked his business into a very prosperous and flourishing condition, when his prospects were suddenly blasted by the destruction of his entire works by fire in December, 1852. He rebuilt, and was soon again in active operation. Fortune smiled on his efforts; but in December of the next year, 1853, at the close of the most successful year he had ever known, fire again laid waste the whole scene of his operations. Nothing daunted, he took a careful survey of his position, and in a short time the thick smoke was seen again ascending from his chimneys, and the sharp click of busy manufacture was again heard in his rebuilt shops. Since then he has increased his area, until his buildings now cover 87,500 feet. The quality of the glass here manufactured is surpassed by that

of no works in the country, and from time to time he has embraced all the improvements and inventions, many of them original, in its manufacture and moulding, which have been suggested. The work is all done in the establishment, from the making of the glass to the finishing of every article, even the construction of the moulds and other machinery used. Mr. Slane now employs two hundred men, and no more interesting sight offers itself in our ward than the various operations connected with glass-making in this establishment.—The Boston & New York Central Railroad passes near by it.

---

*Phœnix Glass Works.*—Situated near Mr. Slane's buildings, are the works commenced in 1811, to which we have already referred, and for many years successfully conducted by Mr. Thomas Cains. These, too, have been several times destroyed by fire, and the rapidity and completeness with which new buildings have sprung up from the ashes of the old ones, warrants the name which in consequence has recently been given them. The health of Mr. Cains has prevented his confining himself to the business of the concern for some years past, and his son and son-in-law have been connected with him. The death of the latter, Mr. William Johnston, the present year (1857), leaves it now in the hands of the Messrs. Cains, by whom it is extensively carried on.

---

*Mount Washington Glass Works.*—These works were for many years under the superintendence of the late Luther Russell. They are now conducted by Jarves & Cormerais. The buildings are situated on Second street, near Dorchester street, and a large number of hands are employed in them.

*The Brewery*—On Second street, is now carried on by James L. Phipps & Co., who are doing a very large and profitable business. Indeed, the establishment is the largest in its operations of any in the New England States.

---

*Other Manufacturing Establishments.* — Many other works are carried on in South Boston, but we can merely mention Brainard's Wagon Factory, famous for its Express wagons, Earl's Soap Factory, Howard's Brass Foundry, Cuba Iron Foundry, Frye's Carriage Shop, Downer's Soap Works, Suffolk Lead Works, Plough Factory, Stevens, Ingolls, & Co.'s Brass Foundry, P. A. Sylvester's Machine Shop, &c.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

### MISCELLANEOUS.

*Banks.*—SOUTH BOSTON has had four Banks located within its limits, only two of which are now in operation.

The FRANKLIN and LAFAYETTE, on what was then Turnpike street, both failed in 1837. In 1836, the MECHANICS BANK commenced business in the brick building at the north-easterly corner of A and Fifth streets. The Company soon after erected the building they now occupy at the foot of Broadway. Samuel Goodridge was first President, and Alvan Simonds Cashier. The Bank has been very successful, paying for the ten years, ending April, 1856, 8 per cent. per annum, which with two extra dividends paid at times of increase of capital, make 10 1-3 per

cent. per annum. The original capital of the Bank was \$150,000, but it has been twice increased, and is now \$250,000. J. W. Converse is President, and Alvan Simonds Cashier.

The BROADWAY BANK commenced business operations in December, 1853, in the free-stone building erected by the Company near the foot of Broadway. Seth Adams is President, and H. H. White Cashier.

---

*Newspapers.*—Several unsuccessful attempts were made, some years since, to sustain a newspaper in South Boston. The Galaxy continued for a few months, and then died. In 1847, Mr. Albert J. Wright started the South Boston Gazette, and continued it very successfully until September, 1855, when it passed into other hands and soon ceased to exist. Mr. Wright then started the Mercury, and continued it for a year, when that also was discontinued, and South Boston has now no local paper.

---

*Firemen.*—There are in South Boston two Fire Companies—both provided with admirable machines, and manned by a gallant and courageous body of firemen, always ready for action. Mazeppa, No. 1, is located near the head of Broadway; Perkins, No. 2, on Broadway near C street.

---

*Military.*—The Pulaski Guards were chartered in March, 1836, and their first captain was Col. J. L. C. Amee. Subsequently they changed their name to the "Mechanic Greys," but resumed the old name in May, 1841. They are now in a prosperous condition, under Capt. Joshua Jenkins as commander.

*Water.*—South Boston enjoys the benefit of the Cohituate water, in common with its neighbors of the city proper. The water is brought across the Old Bridge in an iron pipe, laid on a foundation of earth supported at the sides by piles and planks, as far as the harbor line. It is thence supported across the public waters, as far as the draw and channel, in a wooden box, resting on piles. It was originally intended that it should be protected from frost, by a filling of non-conducting materials, but this was afterwards abandoned. The pipe is carried in an inverted siphon 20 inches in diameter, with perpendicular ends, under the water, and imbedded in the hard bottom of the channel. It is enclosed in a box or frame of timber, and completely enveloped with a covering of hydraulic cement. It is thence conducted to the reservoir on the hill, and then distributed to all parts of the place.

The reservoir is placed on the east side of Thomas Park. The walls are formed of a puddled embankment, lined inside with granite rubble, and the bottom paved with pebble stones. It resembles in shape a segment of an ellipse, measuring across the widest part about three hundred and seventy feet, and about two hundred and sixty across the narrowest part. It contains 7,508,246 gallons. The top of the dam is 125.86 feet above tide marsh level, and the bottom of the reservoir 105.35 feet. The occasion of the introduction of the water, Nov. 20th, 1849, was made a gala day in South Boston. Thousands gathered upon the hill, where a salute was fired by the Mt. Washington Guards, singing by the children, and an eloquent address by His Honor, Mayor Bigelow. The appearance of the water, as it first jetted up, was the signal for one general



shout of joy, in which the booming of cannon joined with thunder tones.

Since then, the hill has been levelled and made into a magnificent Park, and called THOMAS PARK, in honor of General Thomas, of Revolutionary remembrance. A beautiful drive around the whole is reached from G street.

---

*Gas.*—South Boston is supplied with gas by a Company incorporated on the 13th of April, 1852. The gas was first used on December 16th, 1852. The works are situated on Seventh street, near the corner of B street. Pipes are laid in all the principal streets, and many of our citizens avail themselves of the use of this brilliant light in their stores and dwellings.

The following are the present officers of the Company:—

*President*—WILLIAM T. ANDREWS.

*Directors*—WILLIAM T. ANDREWS, FRANCIS ALGER, JOHN H. BLAKE, THOMAS B. WALES, EDWARD J. DAVENPORT.

*Clerk*—EDWARD J. DAVENPORT.

*Treasurer*—JEREMY DRAKE.

*Agents*—JOHN H. BLAKE, FRANKLIN DARRACOTT.

*Superintendent*—EDWARD JONES.

---

*Hawes Free Evening School.*—This Institution has been conducted every winter, for some years past, by a Committee, chosen by the citizens, in connection with the Trustees of Hawes Fund. Its expenses are paid out of money left by John Hawes for the support of schools in South Boston, and it has been the means of much profit to a class which could not otherwise be reached.

*Shade Tree Society.*—On the evening of March 23, 1853, a meeting of citizens was held for the purpose of organizing a Shade Tree Society. C. J. F. Allen was chosen Chairman of the meeting, and Lewis Smith Secretary. Josiah Dunham, Jr., Chairman of a Committee appointed for that purpose, reported Rules and Regulations for the government of the Society.

The following gentlemen were chosen officers of the Society, and as no subsequent meeting has since been held, they have retained their situations until the present time.

*President*—SAMUEL LEEDS.

*Vice Presidents*—ISAAC ADAMS and SAMUEL HILL.

*Directors*—FREDERIC NICKERSON, SAMUEL R. SPINNEY, JOSHUA JENKINS, GEORGE P. BLAKE, JOHN P. MONKS.

*Treasurer*—CALEB GILL.

*Secretary*—LEWIS SMITH.

The receipts of the Society have been,

From individual subscriptions	\$288 75
From Trees sold and payment for setting out	543 56
	<hr/>
	\$832 31

The Expenditures have been,

For 550 Trees purchased	520 04
Labor and other expenses attending setting out trees	290 27
	<hr/>
	810 31

Leaving a balance on hand at the present time, May 18, 1857, of	22 00
	<hr/>
	\$832 31

The principal operations of the Society were made during the years 1853 and 1854, under the direction of the President, Samuel Leeds, Esq., to whom the public are much indebted for the impulse which has been given to this object.

The benefit to South Boston by this organization cannot be estimated by the amount of money collected and expended, or the number of trees set out by it during its existence. Its operations have been the means of awakening an interest in the subject, and hundreds of trees have been set along the borders of our streets by individuals, which will be of incalculable benefit to future generations.

It is to be hoped that the day is not far distant when every street, as soon as graded, will be graced with flourishing and beautiful shade trees.

---

*The South Boston Samaritan Society.*—In addition to the charitable associations connected with the individual churches in South Boston, the society with the above name is general in its character, neither its members nor its beneficiaries being confined to any religious denomination. The following brief sketch of its formation and operations will show what it has accomplished, during the fourteen years of its existence.

October 19th, 1842, some of the ladies of South Boston met together at Brooks Hall, and formed a charitable association under the title of The South Boston Samaritan Society, for the relief of the suffering poor of this Ward. Mrs. Samuel Hill was the first President, which office she held for a number of years.

This society, consisting of about 40 members at

its formation, increased in a few years to the number of 230.

In 1851, Mr. Elisha Goodenow, a beneficent resident of South Boston, bequeathed to the Society the sum of \$1000. Thereupon the Society petitioned the Legislature for an act of incorporation; and a charter was granted, February 6, 1852.

Gentlemen are admitted as life or honorary members, and the Society, though not quite as large as it was a few years since, is in a flourishing condition, dispensing sympathy and comfort to the destitute and wretched. The following table will give the reader some idea of its proceedings.

	RECEIPTS.	EXPENDITURES.
In the year 1843	\$407 08	\$303 82
1844	395 28	273 73
1845	185 87	182 87
1846	unknown	unknown
1847	126 73	122 62
1848	162 26	160 76
1849	123 11	113 19
1850	95 01	101 95
1851	141 50	144 77
1852	129 82	120 30
1853	99 69	96 45
1854	94 37	98 92
1855	287 57	289 13
1856	252 94	241 08
Total	\$2,501 23	\$2,249 59

From the above table it will be seen that, during the first year of its existence, the Society received and expended more money than any year since. Of late, however, the interest seems to be revived, and

in 1856, when the Society held its Fair in Lyceum Hall, by the aid of a generous public the sum of \$1125 was realized.

---

*Masons and Odd Fellows.*—There are two Masonic Lodges in South Boston—St. Paul's, and Gate of the Temple. They both meet in Jenkins's Building.

Bethesda Lodge No. 30, I. O. of O. F., meet at Fraternity Hall, 120 Broadway; also Mt. Washington Encampment No. 6.

Washington Chapter of the Order of United Americans meet at the same place.

---

*Lyceum Hall*—Was built in 1846, by an incorporated company, having a capital of \$20,000, with a par value each share of 25 dollars. As but \$12,000 were subscribed, no dividends were paid for several years, the profits being used to make up the remaining amount of capital. The main hall will accommodate about 600 persons, and the stores on the lower floor are large and well situated for business.

---

*City Institutions.*—About the year 1822 the city purchased a large tract of land at the Point, and erected thereon a Poor House. In due time other Institutions followed, until there were built there the House of Industry, a brick building; House of Reformation, a stone building; a Lunatic Asylum, of brick; and a House of Correction, a little easterly of the Asylum. Many of the citizens of South Boston felt regret that these City Buildings were within the limits of the Ward; and after the purchase of Deer Island by the city, long and frequent were the struggles of those anxious to move the whole of

these institutions to that place. Finally a House of Industry for the poor was built on that Island, the city paupers were removed into it, and the land in South Boston which was cultivated by them was laid out into streets. The Lunatic Hospital, which was first opened in December, 1839, now under charge of Dr. Walker; and the House of Correction with its extensive shops, under the superintendence of Capt. Robbins, still remain in South Boston.

---

*Omnibuses.*—The first public conveyance from the city proper to South Boston was owned by Ephraim Dodge. As early as 1829, he commenced running a hack, taking passengers from the city to any part of the place in which they desired to be left. Broadway not then being in good condition for wheels, his route lay over the old bridge and up Fourth street. His first attempt to use the main street was frustrated by the sinking of his carriage to the hubs of the wheels in the soft clay. The patronage he received soon warranted him in purchasing two omnibuses, which run to and from the city once every hour. The fare on this line of coaches was ninepence.

In 1838, the Warren Association having opened the Mount Washington Hotel, commenced running a coach from the Old State House to the hotel, charging twenty-five cents. The Company soon, however, reduced the fare to six cents, and placed another coach upon their line, which movement obliged the enterprising pioneer in the business, Mr. Dodge, to discontinue his coaches. The Association, after running the line something less than two years, sold out to Samuel D. Blood, who added two omnibuses and carried on the concern until 1842, when he sold out

to the present proprietor, Jonas C. Gipson. Soon after, Mr. G. associated with himself Horace Hammond, and they have since constantly added to their stock, until now they own twenty coaches, employ some forty men, and keep one hundred and five horses. Trips are run every five minutes from the office near I st. to Cornhill. This "White Line," so called from the coaches all being painted white, fully accommodates the public, to whom, under its judicious management, it has become a cherished institution of the place. The fare, which has varied at different times, is now six cents for a single passage, the old ticket system having been discarded.

---

*Dorchester Avenue Railroad Company.*—As the horse-cars upon this railway enter the city through South Boston, it is proper to speak of it here. The Company was incorporated in April, 1854. Its capital stock is limited to \$300,000, and is divided into shares of \$50 each. Its act of incorporation allows a double or single track to be laid from the Lower Mills in Dorchester, near Milton, to the foot of State street in Boston. A single track is now laid from the last named place over the Federal street Bridge and through South Boston, extending a large part of the way to the contemplated southern terminus, and cars pass regularly over it. The Mayor and Aldermen of Boston have power to designate the streets in South Boston which shall be used for the purpose, and are also permitted to purchase the whole property in South Boston in ten years after the road is opened, by paying at a specified rate. Not more than 5 cents fare is allowed to be taken for a passage between any two stations in Boston, without permission of the Mayor and Aldermen.

*Broadway Railroad Company.*—In April, 1854, a Company under this name was incorporated, with power to construct a railway, with single or double tracks, from South Boston Point to Dorchester Avenue, where it was to form a junction with and enter upon the Dorchester Avenue Railroad, then incorporated but not constructed. Horse-power only was allowed to be used on the road. The capital stock of the Company was to be \$150,000, in shares of \$50 each. The City of Boston was to have the privilege of purchasing of the Company all its rights, property, &c., in the road, at the end of ten years after its opening, on certain conditions, and the existence of the corporation was limited to fifty years. Not more than five cents for each passage was to be taken for fare, without the consent of the Mayor and Aldermen of the city. In June, 1856, the road not having been commenced, the above act was revived, to continue in force for three years more. In the spring of 1857, it was so far changed as to give the Company liberty to enter the city by passing over the Dover street Bridge and Mount Washington Avenue, by first obtaining the consent of the Mayor and Aldermen. The prospects are now favorable for a speedy commencement of the railway.

---

*Washington Village.*—Little Neck was the name of a small village situated at Dorchester Neck, on the old Causeway road, and occupying the knoll where the first settlers had the cattle gate. When Mattapanock became South Boston, this village remained on the Dorchester side of the line. It was so near South Boston, however, that its interests were closely identified with it, and it seemed in fact to be a part and parcel of the Ward. A brick school-



house was built here by the town of Dorchester, and the village was becoming more and more populous. On the 4th of March, 1850, the inhabitants of Little Neck, in meeting assembled, voted to change the name of the place to Washington Village. Several attempts were made to have it annexed to Boston, and this was finally done. On petition of Joshua Jenkins, and others, in May, 1855, Washington Village, with its 1300 inhabitants, and the territory as far as the line of Capt. William Clapp's orchard-wall in Dorchester, was annexed to South Boston, thereby greatly increasing the extent of the territory of the Ward. (See Appendix J.)

---

*Bay View.*—This is the name given to a neat and growing village, situated at old Powow Point, on the southerly shore, bordering on South Boston Bay. It has a large number of very fine dwelling-houses, and its citizens are noted for their neighborly feeling and the endeavors they make for each others' benefit. A fine wide avenue (K street), lighted with gas, leads to it from Fourth street. The dwelling-house of the Rev. Lemuel Capen is here beautifully situated, near the water, and with its out-buildings and surrounding grounds has the appearance of the better class of country farm-houses. Much credit is due to Samuel R. Spinney, Esq., who has a splendid mansion in the village, and who is foremost with money and personal effort in sustaining its interests.

Several of the omnibuses, which pass regularly to and from the city, go to this place, and also to City Point. The cut of the Lawrence School House, on a previous page, represents one of the Bay View coaches passing down B street.

## CHAPTER XX.

EARLY INHABITANTS—STATISTICS OF POPULATION, ETC.  
—MUNICIPAL GOVERNMENT.

OF the character of the native inhabitants of Matapannock we know but little. There is no doubt, however, that our peninsula was formerly a favorite haunt of the Indian. Powow Point, situated near the south end of what is now K street, and facing Thompson's Island, is highly celebrated in the history of our Aborigines. Here the Indians, till within a few years, were in the habit of holding an annual feast. This gathering was in commemoration of a celebrated Indian treaty which was of great importance to the first settlers, and called together multitudes of red-men of the forest. It is said that during this feast nothing was to be used except what came from the sea. Even the water was literally taken from the ocean, and drank from clam-shells. Near the centre of Powow Point is a spring of fresh water, which at high tide is completely covered by the sea. From this source the Indians procured water for common use. This Point is now owned by Rev. Lemuel Capen, and in its vicinity are to be found vast quantities of clam-shells, and occasionally Indian relics have been discovered. Doubtless if excavations were made in the neighborhood, many aboriginal memorials would be brought to light.

A few years previous to the settlement of Dorchester, the Indians were visited by a dreadful pestilence, which swept off thousands of them. From a tradition furnished by John Thomas, an Indian who lived to a great age, and who died some years since

at Framingham, we learn that at Dorchester Neck so many Indians died that they remained unburied, and the few surviving Indians removed to other places. The Indians supposed that this scourge was sent upon them because of their cruel treatment of five Frenchmen who were wrecked on the coast and fell into their hands.

The population of Mattapanock, from the time of its first settlement till its annexation to Boston, was small. At the time of its annexation, it consisted of 12 families, or about 60 persons. These were mostly farmers, and spent their time in cultivating the land they possessed on the peninsula.

In 1810, this number had increased to 354—or 500 per cent. in six years—which showed pretty clearly the impulse which annexation had given to the growth of the place. In 1825, we find the population to have been 1,986—being a gain of 461 per cent. in fifteen years. In 1835, the number was 5,595—an increase of 181 per cent. in ten years. In 1840, the number was 6,176—a growth of only about 10 per cent. for the five years. In 1845, the gain was greater, the number of inhabitants being 10,020, or 62 per cent. increase. In 1850, the census showed the population of the ward to be 13,309—that of the whole city being 138,788. The increase in the former during these five years was nearly 33 per cent. In 1855, the population of South Boston, exclusive of Washington Village, which had just been annexed, was 16,612—making the gain for these five years about 25 per cent. The population of the annexed territory being 1,319, the total number in the ward was, in 1855, 17,931—making it the third ward in the city in point of numbers. By the cen-

sus, that year, the total population of the city was 162,748.

In the year 1838, when South Boston became a ward by itself, the number of voters was 712; in 1840, 853; in 1843, 1,124; in 1844, 1,382; in 1845, 1,421; in 1855, exclusive of Washington Village, 2,116. It will be seen that the voters did not increase in proportion to the population. This was mainly owing to the number of foreigners among the new comers into the ward. The proportion of voters was more favorable, however, in South Boston, than in the city at large. The population of the city in 1845 was 114,326; in 1855, 162,748—a gain of 42.20 per cent. In the former year the number of voters in the city was 20,351; in the latter, 23,342—a gain of only 14.69 per cent. In South Boston, during the same period, the increase of population was 65.78 per cent.; that of voters, 41.16 per cent.

In 1840, the number of dwelling-houses in South Boston, according to Mr. Shattuck's Census Report, was 719; in 1845, 1,105 (82 of brick); in 1855, by the Census Report of that year, 1,978, being a larger number than in any other ward in the city. The number in all the wards of the city, in 1855, was 15,880. In 1845, Mr. Shattuck states that the number of houses in Ward 12 owned by the occupants was 403—no other ward, except 11, equalling it in this respect. He also states that the number of houses in South Boston having cisterns, that year, was 692—more than in any other ward. In the same year, the number of families in South Boston was 1,654—in the whole city, 19,175; number of families to each house, 1.56—in the whole city, 1.87; number of persons to a house, 9.47—in the whole

city, 10.57; number of persons to a family, 6.05—in the whole city, 5.96. In 1855, according to Mr. George Adams's Census Report, the whole number of families in South Boston was 3,107—in the whole city, 29,810; average number of families to one house, 1.57—in the whole city, 1.87; average number of persons to one house, 8.39—in the whole city, 10.16; average number of persons to each family, 5.34—in the whole city, 5.41.

The rise in the value of real estate in South Boston, has been, very naturally, since the erection of the North Free Bridge in 1828, much greater than the growth of the population, or the increase in the number of voters or of buildings. On page 78 of this work, will be found the valuation of real estate, taxes, &c. in the year 1804. From that time till the bridge was completed, but little advance seems to have taken place; but after that event, it was soon pretty well understood that the land in South Boston would some time really be used for house-lots, and it began to be valued accordingly. From 1835 to 1845, the increase in the population, as already stated, was 4,425, or about 79 per cent.; while the increase in the value of real estate, according to the following table, was more than 450 per cent.! From 1845 to 1855, the gain in population was 42.30 per cent.; increase of voters, 14.69 per cent.; that of dwelling-houses, 79 per cent.—while the rise in the value of real estate amounted to more than 116 per cent. The growing manufacturing establishments in the ward, and an increased proportion of the better class of dwelling-houses, of course assisted in swelling the valuation of real estate. The table here given will be found interesting for present comparison, and convenient for future reference.

Years.	Real Estate.	Personal Estate.	Total Valuation.	Polls.	Tax.
1835	\$ 506,200	\$115,500	\$ 621,700	734	\$ 7,131 49
1840	753,400	155,500	908,900	1,027	11,583 40
1844	1,777,200	505,605	2,282,800	1,719	16,275 30
1845	2,900,000	567,800	3,467,800	1,796	22,460 46
1846	3,676,000	651,500	4,327,500	1,972	28,921 00
1847	4,229,000	718,200	4,947,200	2,123	32,867 70
1848	4,442,400	762,600	5,205,000	2,289	37,266 50
1849	4,809,000	790,400	5,599,400	2,233	39,745 60
1850	4,542,000	836,000	5,378,000	2,160	39,810 40
1851	4,423,000	866,000	5,289,000	2,293	40,462 50
1852	4,322,900	868,600	5,191,500	2,349	36,749 10
1853	4,577,300	1,031,300	5,608,600	2,465	46,322 86
1854	5,758,900	1,488,900	7,247,800	2,551	70,506 26
1855	6,280,600	1,695,000	7,975,600	2,592	65,300 12
1856	7,409,100	1,864,100	9,273,200	3,062	78,778 60

The births and deaths in South Boston, for a few years past, have been as follows—the total number of each in the whole city being also given.

Year.	Total Births in Boston.	Births in S. Boston.	Total Deaths in Boston.	Deaths in S. Boston.
1850	5,279	487	3,667	281 except City Institutions.
1851	5,388	553	3,855	313 “ “
1852	5,308	544	3,736	322 “ “
1853	5,596	573	4,284	371 “ “
1854	5,688	621	4,441	425 “ “
1855	5,816	691	4,080	526 includ'g City Institutions.
1856	5,922	838	4,253	465 “ “

During the year 1850, the deaths in South Boston were as 1 to 47 of its whole population—those in the whole city that year being 1 to 38. In the year 1855, however, the proportion was not so favorable, being about 1 to 38 in South Boston, after deducting the 59 deaths in the city institutions. In the intermediate years, it varied between the two rates. In 1856, Mr. Apollonio, the City Registrar, estimated the population of South Boston at 11.01 per cent. of the population of the whole city, the deaths during the year being 10.93 per cent. of the total deaths in

the city. During the same year the deaths from consumption were proportionally smaller in Ward 12 than in any other ward—being 13.54 per cent. of the total deaths in the ward. Ward 8 had the largest number of deaths by this disease—viz. 21.34 per cent. of all the deaths in its limits.

Scarlet fever prevailed extensively as an epidemic throughout the city in 1856, carrying off no less than 362 children—being 8.51 per cent. of all the deaths. South Boston suffered with the other wards, but not quite its full proportion—the deaths by this disease being 33 in Ward 12, or about 9 per cent. of the total number in all the wards. The number in Ward 1 was no less than 68—but in Ward 4, only 8.

### *Municipal Organization.*

Previous to 1804, the peninsula called Dorchester Neck, constituting a part of Dorchester, was under the care and government of the authorities of that town. Those who resided on the Neck enjoyed all the privileges and immunities of the inhabitants of Dorchester proper, and were taxed according to the same rates.

In 1804, however, as before remarked, by an act of the Legislature, Dorchester Neck was made a part of Boston, and became subject to the rules and regulations of that town. The town was divided into twelve Wards, the twelfth consisting of not only South Boston, but also “all south side of Eliot to Orange street; east side of Orange street to Beach street; the south side of Beach street to Front street and the water, to the southern limits of the town.”

In 1822, the town of Boston became a city, and the boundaries of the different Wards were then

changed. Ward Twelve now consisted of "South Boston, the southerly side of Pine, across Washington street to Warren street, the westerly side of Warren to Eliot street, the southerly side of Eliot, across Pleasant street, to Charles River, and all southerly of the above." On the 10th of December, 1838, the city proper had so increased in population, and South Boston had become so thickly settled, that it was deemed advisable to make the peninsula a separate Ward. Accordingly, since that time our citizens have voted as inhabitants of WARD XII.

The government of the whole city consists of a Mayor, twelve Aldermen, and forty-eight Common Councilmen, composing two Boards, which together are denominated the City Council. The Legislative power is vested in the Common Council, and the Executive power in the Mayor and Aldermen. Four members of the Common Council are elected by the voters of Ward 12, and are citizens of South Boston. In former years, when only eight Aldermen were chosen, it was customary to have one from South Boston, and it is now required by the Revised Charter of 1854, that one shall represent each ward.

The following gentlemen have represented South Boston in the Board of Aldermen.

Cyrus Alger, 1824, 1827.

Adam Bent, 1831.

Josiah Dunham, 1834, 1835, 1836.

Thomas Richardson, 1837, 1838, 1839.

Larra Crane, 1842, 1844.

Samuel S. Perkins, 1845, 1849, 1850.

Thomas Jones, 1846, 1847.

Benjamin James, 1852, 1853, 1857.

Josiah Dunham, Jr., 1854, 1855.

Eben Jackson, 1856.



In the Common Council, the following gentlemen have been the representatives of the citizens of Ward XII.

Cyrus Alger, 1822.

Noah Brooks, 1823.

Isaac Thom, 1824.

Adam Bent, 1825, 1826, 1827.

William Wright, 1827.

Thomas Melville Vinson, 1830, 1831.

James Wright, 1830.

Ebenezer Hayward, 1832.

Joseph Harris, Jr., 1832, 1833, 1834.

Josiah Dunham, 1833.

Josiah Lee Currell Amee, 1834, 1839, 1840.

Dr. John Bliss Stebbins, 1835.

William B. Dorr, 1835.

Alpheus Stetson, 1836.

Solon Jenkins, 1836, 1837, 1846.

Josiah Dunham, Jr., 1837, 1849, 1850, 1851.

Jeremy Drake, 1838, 1842, 1843, 1844.

Nehemiah P. Mann, 1838.

Nicholas Noyes, 1839.

George Page, 1839, 1840.

Horatio N. Crane, 1839, 1840.

Eben Jackson, 1840, 1843.

Samuel Leeds, 1841.

William H. Howard, 1841.

Seriah Stevens, 1841.

William B. Harding, 1841.

Willis Howes, 1842.

John Tillson, 1842, 1843.

Caleb Thurston, 1842.

Romanus Emerson, 1843.

Asa Brown, 1844.

Henry W. Fletcher, 1844.

Isaac Jones, 1844.  
Samuel C. Demerest, 1845.  
Thomas Jones, 1845.  
Samuel W. Sloan, 1845.  
Theophilus Stover, 1845.  
William Eaton, 1846, 1847.  
Seth Adams, 1846.  
John W. Crafts, 1846.  
Jabez Coney, 1847, 1850.  
Samuel S. Perkins, 1847, 1848.  
Alvan Simonds, 1847, 1848.  
Benjamin James, 1848, 1849.  
Joseph Smith, 1848, 1849, 1850, 1851.  
Samuel D. Crane, 1849, 1850, 1851.  
Zibeon Southard, 1851, 1852.  
John Proctor, 1852.  
George N. Noyes, 1852.  
Samuel R. Spinney, 1852.  
C. C. Conley, 1853, 1854.  
Joshua Jenkins, 1853, 1854.  
William S. Thacher, 1853.  
James F. Whittemore, 1853, 1854.  
E. H. Brainard, 1854, 1855.  
George S. Dexter, 1855.  
Daniel Hall, 1855.  
Jedediah P. Bean, 1855.  
Ezra Harlow, 1856.  
F. M. Josselyn, Jr., 1856, 1857.  
Lewis C. Whiton, 1856, 1857.  
Sumner Crosby, 1856.  
Henry Mason, 1857.  
D. W. Bailey, 1857.

In 1828, the inhabitants of South Boston, and the citizens of Ward 12 on the other side of the water, disagreed as to the list of officers nominated for

of the patrimonial estate, where he had been brought up. When he again left this place of his early attachments, he returned to Dorchester, where he lived many years in agricultural pursuits, an industrious citizen, and was for about forty-five years an exemplary member of the church in that place.

At rather an advanced age he married Mrs. Sarah Clap, widow of Mr. Elisha Clap, and daughter of Mr. Thomas Bird, for whom he had, very early, cherished a strong attachment—an attachment not easily to be broken; for he appears to have resolutely determined not to marry any other. His sincere and fixed regard for his consort was sufficiently evinced by the provision made for her in his last will, about fifteen years before his death. To her he devised the improvement of all his extensive real estate; and the whole income of his personal estate; to be at her entire disposal, during life. He survived her, however, over six years. The last twenty-five years of his life he spent in this place. Having no children, his strong attachments to these scenes of his childhood and youth, and the place where he had spent so large a portion of his mature and active life, induced him, no doubt, to appropriate the residue of his estate to the use of the inhabitants of South Boston, after devising a competent portion of it to his nearest relatives, and those of his consort and other friends. The provision made by him for the purposes of education, and especially for erecting a house for religious worship, and for the support of the gospel ministry, seems to justify the application of what is related of the good centurion, in our context—‘He loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.’

At the first view, it may seem perhaps that but

little, worthy of special notice, can be gathered from the life of a retired individual—one who through all his days had kept so much by himself, employed in the quiet pursuits of husbandry; a man without education, and who had occupied so small a space in public life. But on a closer and more accurate inspection, we may find in him much that is worthy of the imitation, not only of those in his own walks of life, but of those also who have the management of public concerns; to whom are committed the higher trusts in the community. I have said he was without education. And truly, of the knowledge derived from books and learned instructors, he could boast but very little. Still, in the no less important concern of self-education he was peculiarly distinguished. But few men probably can be found, who have profited more by observation and reflection, or have treasured up more maxims of practical wisdom for the discipline of their minds and the regulation of their conduct. In his person, manners, and general principles of action, he exhibited a fair specimen of the days long gone by. His tall figure, his thoughtful and sedate visage, his dress, his equipage—every thing about him bespoke him a representative of the earlier days of the last century. He was indeed among the last of those venerable men, so frequently to be met with in the records of the past. After that ancient model of “simplicity and godly sincerity,” which distinguished the first settlers of Dorchester, of whom he was a lineal descendant, he had formed his character; and all the lines of it were too deep and strong to yield, in the least, to the influence of modern refinement. Possibly he would have been considered rather an eccentric character in any age. But I am inclined to attribute this in-

dication to an unusual degree of independence, and fixedness of principle, which led him to rely upon the resources of his own mind rather than the opinion or example of others; and strengthened the hold of his early impressions and associations. As usual with strong uncultivated minds, this trait in his character partook, in a considerable degree, of obstinacy. He formed his opinions and took his measures with great care and deliberation; and it must be confessed, for the most part, with much discretion and good judgment. But when he had taken his ground, neither flattery nor persuasion, neither eloquence nor argument, could divert his mind, or turn him from his purpose. For one who had mingled so little with society, and whose reading was limited almost exclusively to his Bible, his knowledge of the principles of human conduct was remarkably accurate. He was possessed of a native acuteness and discrimination, which enabled him readily to discern the characters of those with whom he had intercourse. So limited was his personal acquaintance with men and manners, that I hardly know how to account for it, but his knowledge of character seemed almost intuitive. It did not appear to be the result of suspicion or distrust; for he was remarkably confiding, where he felt that confidence would not be misplaced. Open and ingenuous—entirely above disguise and ‘cunning craftiness’ himself, nothing was more certain to meet his cordial disapprobation, than a disposition in others to overreach and intrigue. In addition to the natural strength of his intellect, he had much ready wit; and his society was often rendered peculiarly agreeable by his quaint humor, and his pithy and forcible remarks.

Mr. Hawes possessed a mind rich in native re-

sources, which, if it had enjoyed the benefit of early and extensive culture, would have been brilliant as well as accurate and strong;—a mind that might have enlightened, directed and controlled society.

His disposition was kind and pacific. His constant wish and prayer was, 'to live in love, and die in peace.' He wished to enjoy unmolested his own, and all his own. But I do not believe he knew, by experience, what it was to envy or repine at the good fortune of others.

Not only the kindness of his disposition, but his strength of religious principle, was evinced by his humble and devout gratitude to God for the prosperity he enjoyed; and by the pleasure he experienced in seeing the prosperity and happiness of others. When sitting or walking alone, he appeared to be much engaged in devotion; for his grateful ejaculations were sometimes overheard. Of his moral integrity—that quality which is worth all others, piety to God only excepted, and without which even piety to God is but a name—it would be difficult to speak in terms too strong. As well as we all know that the love of money was his prevailing worldly passion, I do not believe that money would have tempted him, in any case, to be knowingly guilty of a dishonest or dishonorable deed. In his temper he was rather quick and violent. But the facility with which his mind regained its wonted composure and serenity, was sufficient proof of the good discipline to which he had subjected it; for he suffered not 'the sun to go down upon his wrath.'

He was naturally retiring and unobtrusive. He sought neither influence, favor nor promotion, from any quarter; nor was he disposed to obstruct the influence, favor or promotion of any, but kept on

the even tenor of his way, 'and turned not to the right hand nor to the left.' He carefully and assiduously attended to his own concerns, without busying himself at all with those of others. Still he was neither morose in his temper, nor unsocial in his manners. He was always affable, in his plain, undorned way; and till reduced by his last sickness, which was merely the gradual infirmity of age, he retained in a high degree the use of his faculties and enjoyed the society and conversation of his friends.

With his many excellent points, some may imagine, perhaps, that he might have been a much more estimable character, if he had been the generous, public-spirited benefactor of society while living. A moment's reflection, however, will convince us, that this was, in the nature of things, impossible. As he commenced life in extreme poverty, if he had been, from the beginning, of a generous turn, he must always have remained poor. He never could have accumulated enough to make himself a charitable benefactor. We must consider, that his character was formed, and the foundation of his fortune laid, at a period in the history of our country, when great fortunes were not made in a day; and comparatively but few could possess the means of being extensively liberal with their property; when habits of the strictest economy and frugality were absolutely essential to every one's success in business. And besides, his wealth was never so great as to warrant a profuse and indiscriminate charity, in view of those extraordinary emergencies to which all are liable. But, though it was not to be expected, that in his circumstances, with his fixed habits of economy and frugality, he would come forward with liberal contributions to objects of general benevolence; still

he was not insensible to the claims of actual want. He did not indeed 'sound a trumpet' before him, or after him, to proclaim what he gave. But there are those, who, if it were necessary, might speak of his living charities, and refer to the records of his generous deeds. He was, moreover, truly hospitable to all, as opportunity offered;—to strangers as well as to friends, with such things as himself partook. It was a hospitality suited to the plainness and simplicity of former times; but evidently prompted by kind and generous feelings."

*Joseph Woodward.*

For more than thirty years the name of JOSEPH WOODWARD was so identified with the interests of South Boston, and his active energies so constantly employed to forward them, that his life and character are entitled to special notice. And besides, his character was peculiar and strongly marked. In it opposite extremes met, and acted in turn with great power. From his fiery and impulsive temper, when it was up, there was no escape. No matter when or where, his passion poured forth without measure and without stint. It came boiling hot and boiling over, without one cooling drop. This was a sad offset to his great good qualities, and brought against him the prejudice and dislike of those who did not know him well enough to value his better nature. His anger, if left to itself, soon cooled, and left him one of the kindest and most obliging of men. The exercise of his good feelings and benevolent disposition was alike free and unstinted. Friendly, hospitable, and public spirited, his best efforts were always ready to be put forth; and he could not do too much, nor hazard too much, for an object, that had enlisted the quenchless ardor of his nature.



Mr. Woodward's life was varied and eventful. He was born at Hingham, Mass., on the 15th day of November, 1758. This was soon after the departure of his father, Daniel Woodward, a sea-captain of that place, on his last voyage—a voyage on which he met an untimely fate, by the treachery and violence of the savages on the North West Coast of America. It was heart-rending news to the widowed mother, who with an older child, a daughter, was left in poverty to bewail her loss. She did not lack the warm sympathy of her neighbors and friends; and the occasion was a most affecting one, when shortly after the tidings of his father's death, the unconscious babe, the subject of this notice, was publicly presented for baptism.

Most of the years of Mr. Woodward's childhood were spent at Sherborn, with his maternal grandfather, Mr. Joy. There he was well cared for; still the society of indulgent grandparents, and of the older boys, his uncles, furnished not the discipline which his irritable and violent temper especially needed. And great allowance should be made for him, that he was not, at that forming period, under the constant and careful watch of discreet parents.

When old enough to earn his living, he was put to live with Dr. Chauncy, the eminent and venerable minister of the First Church in Boston.

This, Mr. Woodward considered the most fortunate occurrence of his life. The discernment of Dr. Chauncy soon discovered his good points—the activity and force of his mind, and the open frankness and kindness of his disposition—and brought them into exercise. And no doubt he did what could then be done to check the violence of his temper. To the last he cherished the highest esteem and reverence

for Dr. Chauncy. He regarded him as a father, and attributed all that was good in his own character to his influence.

In due time he left Dr. Chauncy, to learn the trade of a silversmith. He did not, however, continue long in that business after he was free. Trade had begun to flourish under the new form of government, and mercantile business seemed more congenial to the activity of his mind. For several years he was partner in business with the venerable T. K. Jones, late of Roxbury, but doing business in Boston, and their friendship continued till death. At this period of his life, Mr. Woodward visited Europe, once or more, and used to give a very interesting account of what he saw in the old world. His friend, Dr. Chauncy, gave him letters to gentlemen with whom he corresponded in England, particularly the noted divine, Dr. Price, with whom he became well acquainted.

But we need not follow Mr. Woodward through the fluctuations of business. Like others he was sometimes successful, sometimes not. In early life he married Jane Vincent, and had a family of four sons and three daughters, several of whom died before him, and only one now survives. After residing several years in Boston, he removed to Quincy, then a parish of Braintree, and occupied a farm which he bought of Dr. Chauncy. The same was since, for many years, the residence of the late Hon. Thomas Greenleaf. He afterwards purchased a farm in Tewksbury, where he lived till he removed to South Boston in June, 1804. At that time, as he used to say, there were only seven houses and sixty-three inhabitants, on the original peninsula called Dorchester Neck. In the autumn of 1803, Mr. Woodward came to Boston, went down to Wheeler's

Point, at the foot of South street, mused on the prospect before him, and became convinced that Boston must soon spread in that direction.

Shortly after this, and without disclosing his project to a single soul, he bought of the late Abraham Gould, of this place, a tract of thirty acres of land, extending from the water on the north, along the west line of Dorchester street nearly to the Catholic chapel. This was done solely with the intent of getting Dorchester Neck annexed to Boston, and connected by a bridge in the direction of South street. He then made known his secret to the late Hon. Harrison Gray Otis, to Judge Tudor, Messrs. Jonathan Mason, and Gardiner Greene. These gentlemen thought so well of the project, that they lent it the aid of their wealth and station; and a petition to the Legislature of 1804, for the annexation and a bridge, was successful. The location of the bridge, however, was a subject of strong contention, as has been detailed in a previous chapter. A powerful opposition was organized at the South end, who contended that the utter ruin of their interests would follow, if the bridge went to Wheeler's Point. In this exigence, the best that could be done for South Boston was the building of the old, or South bridge, with a toll, and Front street, now Harrison Avenue, which was all reclaimed from the dead flats. And both were much more beneficial to the South end than to South Boston.

But Mr. Woodward yielded not to this defeat. He never lost sight of his first intent. And he neglected no opportunity to enlist the public feeling in its favor. Year after year, for a long course of years, a petition went up to the Legislature for a bridge to Wheeler's Point. And year after year

the opposition, under the lead of the late Deacon Brown, a representative from the South end, prevailed. The tears of Deacon Brown, deprecating the ruin that awaited the South-end interest, were not to be resisted. But the determined energy and perseverance of *old Jo. Woodward*, as his adversaries contemptuously styled him, was to succeed at last. In 1827 the Legislature granted a free bridge to Sea street, and the present North bridge was built without delay, and made passable the following year, 1828. Those who were not personally witnesses to the facts, can have no just conception of the intrepid ardor and diligence, exhibited by Mr. Woodward, throughout that long and hard-fought struggle, or of the obloquy and reproach—the unsparing bitterness—not to say wanton and systematic abuse, which he suffered from the interested and powerful opposition to his great enterprise.

It is proper to add the testimony of the Hon. Mr. Otis, to the part taken by Mr. Woodward in behalf of South Boston. In a letter to the writer of this, dated October 12, 1836, Mr. Otis says of him, “He was the first person, who proposed to Mr. Mason and my other associates, to make the purchase of what is now South Boston, with the intent to unite it to the old town by a bridge. He was the first projector of it, so far as I know. There can be no question that his heart and faculties were constantly devoted to the object of building up South Boston.”

The last two years of his life, Mr. Woodward spent chiefly at Leominster, with his nephew, the late Charles W. Wilder, M.D., of that place. In a letter from thence, he says, “You well know all my pride has been in the prosperity of that part of the city.” And again, he spoke but the literal truth

when he said, in the same letter, "I have spent the best of my days, and all my little property, for the prosperity of that now flourishing part of the city." It is a fact, that a structure built across the flats nearly to the channel, to help on the project of a bridge, chiefly, if not wholly, at the expense of Mr. Woodward, and at a cost of \$15,000, was all cut away and sent down stream by a nightly gang, led on by the most respectable South-enders.

Mr. Woodward was a competent and efficient Justice of the Peace, and for twenty years the only one at South Boston. He took a deep and lively interest in the politics of the country, from the commencement of the revolution, and was intimately acquainted with the eminent statesmen and legislators of the day. The elder President Adams was his near neighbor, when he resided in Quincy. From the first he was deeply imbued with the spirit of our free institutions, and devoted to the best interests of his country. He was ready to act his part in scenes of *broil and battle* when they occurred. In December, 1773, when the British tea was destroyed, though only a youth of fifteen years, he was fired with the same enthusiasm as his elders, who took part in the measures which led to that event. And after the close of the war, when Mr. Jay's treaty with the British government became known, and a disaffected party paraded the streets of Boston with Mr. Jay hung in effigy, Mr. Woodward, at great personal risk, hustled himself into their ranks, in the dusk of the evening, seized their standard, and bore it off in triumph.

Notwithstanding the violence of his nature, he was a man of strong religious feelings. He well understood the evidences of the Christian revelation, and

had the firmest conviction of its truth. For many years he and his wife were members in the communion of the First Church in Boston; and afterwards removed their relation to the Hawes Place Church, at South Boston. His residence with Dr. Chauncy made him acquainted with the ministers with whom that divine associated; and he was always a friend of the clergy, and fond of their society. He used to express himself in strong and most confiding terms of the parental character of God, and this confidence never forsook him. It enabled him to look forward with calmness to the closing scene, of which he always freely but reverently spoke; and for which he patiently waited in the infirmity of his old age. He died at Leominster, on the 29th of June, 1838, in the 80th year of his age, and was buried at South Boston, the following Sunday, July 1st.

Such was Joseph Woodward, the founder of South Boston. His faults were too open to be concealed, and his good qualities too many and great to be forgotten.

### *Abraham Gould.*

ABRAHAM GOULD resided at Dorchester Neck previous to its annexation to Boston. His wife, Susannah Foster, was the daughter of James and Mary Foster, and a lineal descendant in the fifth generation of Hopestill Foster, one of the earliest and most prominent settlers of Dorchester, and who was made a freeman in 1639. The ancestor, Hopestill, shared largely in lands in what is now called South Boston, and we find in the division of land among the proprietors, in the year 1718, his son James Foster's proportion was 70 acres, being about one-eighth part of the whole "Neck."

The title to a large portion of this land passed to Mr. Gould by his wife, and by purchase in connexion with his brother-in-law, Benjamin Foster. The principal part of it was bounded as follows:—Easterly by the road leading from Dorchester to Castle William, now called Dorchester street; southerly by an old road near the Catholic burying-ground, running westerly to a point near what is now called D street; and from thence running northward by the “Brewery Field” to the sea.

Mr. Gould was born in Sudbury, Mass., in the year 1755, and died in South Boston, February 3, 1840. He had the respect of all who knew him, and will long be remembered as an honest and useful man. His wife died November 14, 1837, aged 70 years.

### *Cyrus Alger.*

An obituary notice of Mr. ALGER appeared in the South Boston Mercury, in February, 1856, from the pen of the author of this work. It contains so much historical matter that it is deemed worthy a place here; and it now appears, with additions furnished by his only surviving son, FRANCIS ALGER, to whom we are indebted for the portrait by Grozelier (copied from a striking likeness by Alexander) inserted as the frontispiece to this volume.

*Death of Cyrus Alger.*—It is with feelings of no common regret that we record the death of one of our oldest, most beloved and influential citizens, Cyrus Alger, Esq., the well-known Iron-Founder of South Boston. Eight weeks since we announced the death of his son Cyrus, little thinking that so speedily the father would be called to follow. The decease of his son bore heavily upon Mr. Alger, whose health had not been very good for some time, and he suffer-

ed, on the 10th of December, a stroke of paralysis, not very severe in its character, but, nevertheless, coming at a time when the mind was overcome with affliction, and the body worn down by anxiety, it excited the apprehensions of his friends. He rallied somewhat, and was able to walk about the house until within a week of his death. He then became weaker, and spoke on Saturday for the last time, after which he seemed unconscious. On Monday, February 4th, at 9½ o'clock, A.M., he gently and sweetly passed away, as though falling into a quiet sleep, in the midst of those whom filial affection had constantly drawn to his bed-side.

Thus has passed from earth a man whose name is more intimately identified with the history of South Boston, whose exertions have contributed more to raise her to her present position, whose perseverance and enterprise have done more to enhance her reputation and wealth, than can be said of any other.

Born in Bridgewater, Mass., Nov. 11, 1781, he attended school for a time in Taunton, and partially fitted for college. He afterwards entered the iron-foundry business with his father (Abiezer Alger) at Easton. In his youth he was noted for his extreme swiftness at running and his great skill in jumping and wrestling, excelling in those sports all the young men in that section of the country. He was also noted as a famous horseman and gunner. Few were the sportsmen who could employ the rifle with such precision. In the year 1809, five years after old Mattapanneck became a part of Boston, he came to South Boston at the solicitation of Gen. Winslow, with whom he formed a partnership and commenced the foundry business in a small building on Second street, near the sight of Russell's Glass House. Gen.



Winslow, in about five years, transferred his business to his son, when Mr. Alger left the firm and erected on his own account a foundry on Fourth street, nearly opposite his late residence. The large building which stood at the corner of Foundry street and the Old Bridge, and which has been demolished within the past two years, was erected as a storehouse for sand and iron, affording, from its position, a fine wharf privilege. The old foundry building still exists, being now an appendage to Alger's Forge on Dorchester Avenue. During the war of 1812, Mr. Alger had contracts with the Government for cannon balls, and manufactured a large number, for which he obtained very high prices. During the time of this war, the late T. H. Perkins was associated with him as a silent partner.

In the year 1804, soon after the annexation of Mattapannock, the building of the Dorchester Turnpike and the erection of the Old Bridge, the South Boston Association reclaimed the flats lying between what is now Fourth and Foundry streets and Dorchester Avenue, by building a sea wall from the Old Bridge along the line of Foundry street, around the beach, to what is now Dorchester Avenue. They did little towards filling up, however, and finally sold to Mr. Alger the whole territory now lying west of Dorchester Avenue, between Federal-street Bridge and a line nearly as far south as Swan street, with the exception of a narrow parcel fronting on the Turnpike between Fourth and Swan streets. In this purchase, Mr. Alger was careful that his deed should take in all the flats in front of the sea wall to the channel, or low water mark; and thus he obtained many thousand feet, which he clearly foresaw would in time prove not the least valuable portion

of his property. Jonathan Mason, the President of the Association, did not regard these flats as of much value, and included them in the sale without any mis-giving, believing that Mr. Alger had given so liberal a price for the upland, that the Association could well afford to throw in the flats.

The speculation was a bold one, and Mr. Alger was laughed at for his presumption in buying such a parcel of land for the purpose, as he avowed, of making building lots. He repaired the sea wall, and began gradually to fill up the flats, having in his mind a plan the final success of which more than answered his expectations.

The South Boston Iron Company, of which he was the originator and principal proprietor, was incorporated in 1827. In this were associated with him the late George C. Thacher, William H. Howard one of the present members of the Company, and the late Mr. Caleb Reed as Treasurer. He then began to improve the property, and taking the sea wall as the easterly boundary, built out a wharf near where Alger's Foundry now stands, and erected a Foundry building. Gradually these works were extended, and at the same time Mr. Alger filled in, and laid out an elegant garden in the rear of his present residence, and built up Fourth and Foundry streets to their present width. Lots for the Mechanics Bank Building and Barker's Building were sold, and affairs began to assume a new appearance. The "Field," as the hollow which so long remained within the triangle formed by Foundry, Turnpike and Division streets, was familiarly called, was not filled up until Mr. Alger sold to the Old Colony Railroad Company a passage through his garden, and the whole of the land they own north of Fourth street.

In the mean time improvements had been progressing on Foundry street. The Sea street Bridge was built and presented to the city, Mr. Alger being one of the most prominent movers in the matter. Through his influence other shops were started, until finally the whole of the flats inside of the Commissioners' line and west of Foundry street were filled in, and covered with machine shops and foundries. Alger's Foundry has also been gradually enlarged, until now it is one of the most perfect iron establishments in the United States.

Mr. Alger had contemplated returning to Easton when the success of his business would warrant a retirement from active life. He purchased a large farm there, erected the most costly barn in the country, and had laid the foundation of a dwelling-house, when an event occurred which he afterwards looked upon as the most fortunate one in his life, changing as it did all his plans. The barn, when full of hay and grain, was struck by lightning and entirely consumed, and was never rebuilt.

Mr. Alger was one of the best practical iron metallurgists in the United States. He succeeded, by a method peculiar to himself, in purifying cast iron, so as to give it more than triple the strength of ordinary cast iron; the process consisting in removing impurities from the metal while in a fluid state, and causing it to be much more dense. The method gave him a great advantage over other iron founders. It also gave him superior skill in the manufacture of cannon, and for many years he has been very largely employed in making guns for the United States Government, his cannon having sustained most extraordinary endurance when subjected to extreme proof. The mortar gun "Columbiad," the largest gun of

cast iron ever cast in America, was made under his personal supervision.\* In the composition of fuses for bomb shells he also made great improvements, which have been adopted by the Government. He also first introduced and patented the method of making cast iron chilled rolls, by which the part subject to wear should be hard, while the necks remain unchanged as to hardness and strength—these being cast in sand, while the body is cast in a chill, or iron cylinder. Until his time all the reverberatory furnaces for melting iron were made with hearths inclining from the fire, the metal thus running from the heat towards the throat of the chimney. He changed the form, so as to allow the iron to flow towards the flame where the heat would be the most intense. He was familiar with the methods of working the ores of iron, and with the operations of the crucible.

Nor did he confine his attention to iron. He manufactured the first perfect bronze cannon for the United States Ordnance Department, and for the State of Massachusetts. For these he obtained the gold medal awarded by the Massachusetts Mechanic Association.

In 1829, he visited Nova Scotia, and in connection

---

\* During the experimental firings of this gun at South Boston Point, an interesting incident occurred. One of the balls discharged from it, and weighing nearly 200 pounds, had deviated from the course in which Mr. Alger intended it should go, and instead of stopping, as usual, on the opposite shore of the Bay (distance  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles), continued on, ploughing its way through an unsuspecting farmer's potato field, throwing up dirt and stones and a cloud of dust within a few rods of his house and not far from where he stood. A neighbor passing by at the time, asked him, "Are you not afraid of such close shooting as that?" "Oh no," said he, "Mr. Alger knows what he is about."

with several capitalists of Halifax, built the first Smelting Furnace in the British Provinces, locating it on Moose River, a few miles from Annapolis. The machinery was made at his works in Boston, and mechanics in his own employment were sent to put it up. Many are they in that vicinity who speak in grateful remembrance of one who did so much to call forth their energies and open the wealth that lay hidden beneath their feet. The works went into operation, but failing to command the additional capital required in carrying out Mr. Alger's plans, they were not extended to the manufacture of bar iron and steel. In this enterprise the loss to Mr. Alger was more than ten thousand dollars.

Of late years, Mr. Alger has by no means been idle, but has been ever active in making improvements, spending large sums of money in enriching, beautifying, and otherwise benefiting South Boston. He purchased eleven acres of marsh between South Boston and Washington Village, and was instrumental in attracting thither the two extensive manufactories that are situated in that section of the Ward. He also laid out a large sum in beautifying Dorchester Avenue, building sidewalks and at his own expense setting out shade trees, the entire distance from the Railroad crossing to the junction of Dorchester street and Dorchester Avenue.

At the time of the attack which has terminated fatally, he had partially perfected several plans for improvement which, if carried into effect, would have been of the greatest benefit to the Twelfth Ward.

His influence was very great, and to his personal exertion and enterprise South Boston is indebted for much of the mechanical reputation she enjoys. He attracted business, encouraged every movement

for extending the mechanical operations of the neighborhood, and by his reputation and wealth was enabled to ensure success in almost every project he undertook. The most extensive land-holder in South Boston, he knew full well the importance of giving the place a reputation, and encouraged every effort made for improvement.

As a citizen, Mr. Alger was universally beloved, and he enjoyed the full confidence of his fellow citizens, who looked upon him as a person to whom they could confidently entrust their interests. He was a member of the Common Council the first year of the organization of the City Government of Boston, and represented South Boston as Alderman during a portion of the year 1824 and in 1827.

Mr. Alger's kindness to the men in his employ was proverbial, and he has often kept men on half time when their services were not needed, to prevent the pecuniary distress which would be caused by a discharge. He was the first man in South Boston to introduce the ten hour system. His payments to his workmen have been always in cash, and amounted for years to nearly two thousand dollars per week, and he probably paid more money during his lifetime for labor than any other man in our city. The benefit to South Boston of such prompt and sure employment as his works afforded, is incalculable.

In private life his character was unblemished. He was liberal in his views and benevolent in his feelings. His donations to the poor, and for charitable and religious purposes, amounted in the aggregate to a large sum annually. He made no boast of his liberality; but when he gave alms he did it in secret, and it was known only to his own family and the recipients of his bounty.

In his family he was a kind husband and father; and the deep sorrow arising from the loss of his youngest son, undoubtedly hastened his decease.

In Mr. Alger's death it may truly be said, South Boston has lost one of its most influential and valuable citizens; our city has lost a man whose labors have done very much to advance its reputation, and the United States has lost one of its most skilful and enterprising mechanics.

The funeral obsequies of Mr. Alger took place on Thursday afternoon at his late residence on Fourth street. The corpse was clad in a white shroud, and the countenance looked very natural, his illness having made little change in his appearance. The services were commenced by reading selections from the Scriptures by Rev. Dr. Gannett, after which the beautiful hymn,

"Thou art gone to the grave, but we will not deplore thee,"

was sung. Rev. Professor Huntington, of whose late church Mr. Alger had long been a member, and upon whose ministrations he was a very constant attendant, then offered a most touching and beautiful prayer, after which the hymn,

"How blest the righteous when he dies,"

was sung, and the benediction pronounced.

A procession was then formed, and passed through Dorchester Avenue and Broadway to the Union Ground at City Point. Notwithstanding the severe storm, a large number of persons preceded the hearse on foot, the mourners following the corpse in carriages.

As a mark of respect to the memory of the deceased, all the stores, without a single exception, on

the route of the procession, were closed while the body was being borne to the tomb, and the various church bells, by order of the Mayor, tolled a solemn requiem. Nor were these the only tokens of respect paid to the honored dead. Nearly all the large manufactories suspended work for the afternoon, from the Armory floated the American flag at half-mast, and arrangements had been made to have the pupils of the public schools join in the procession, had not the weather been so very inclement. We have never seen in South Boston such general and heartfelt sorrow at the death of a citizen as at that of Mr. Alger, nor do we remember a more universal endeavor to pay respect to the memory of any one.

The following, a fitting close to our notice, is from the pen of a distinguished officer of the United States Navy Department—Commodore J. A. Dahlgreen:—

“That we should lose the services of one so able as Mr. Alger, is much to be deplored; but it is to be remembered that his term extended to three-fourths of a century, and that his sterling integrity, rare abilities, and unceasing industry, have built him up a durable fame, which is at once a rich legacy to his family, and an example most worthy of imitation.

“He possessed that rare quality, sagacity, which constitutes, in truth, the highest attribute of the intellectual man—and enabled him to arrive at results which others sought by disciplined study laboriously and often in vain. Minds of this cast are rarely met with, and they are invaluable to their time and generation. I shall ever retain the most profound regard for the many excellent virtues and great abilities of Cyrus Alger.”



*Adam Bent.*

ADAM BENT, a very intelligent and worthy man, and an active and useful citizen, lived at South Boston about fifty years. He was born in Milton, on the 17th of March, 1776—the day immediately following the memorable night, when the fortress was thrown up here upon Dorchester Heights. He was the son of Ebenezer Bent, who died in middle life, leaving a numerous family, of whom Adam was among the elder. He served his apprenticeship with Benjamin Crehore, of Milton, who was a cabinet-maker, and the maker of musical instruments.

In the summer of 1797, a Frenchman, named Mallet, connected with the theatre in Boston, sent him a piano-forte to be repaired, said to have been the first instrument of the kind ever brought to this country; and Mr. Bent was employed to make the repairs. In this way getting an insight into the structure of the instrument, he soon removed to Boston, and with an older brother, William Bent, commenced the manufacture; and if not the first, they were among the first who engaged in the business of making the forte piano, as it was then called, in this country. That original instrument was plain as a common table—a shrill and slender article, which a man might easily handle alone, and would but ill compare with the costly and melodious instruments of 1857.

After living about ten years in the old part of Boston, Mr. Bent removed to South Boston in the year 1807. The following year he was married to Sukey Foster Blake, of this place, and here continued to reside for the residue of his years.

He died on the 22d of March, 1857, after an ill-

ness of a few weeks, at the age of 81 years and five days.

Mr. Bent was a man of modest deportment, not ambitious of distinction, but always ready to serve the public in any office to which he might be called. After the city organization, he served three years as a member of the Common Council, and one (the year 1831) on the board of Aldermen, and was for five years a Representative from Boston to the General Court; and performed the duties of these several offices with credit to himself and to the satisfaction of his constituents. He was one of the fourteen original members of the Hawes Place Society, named in their act of incorporation, and was the last survivor of them. On the 22d of October, 1829, he was chosen a Deacon of the Church connected with that society, and by virtue of that office was one of the Trustees of the Hawes Fund.

In all the relations of life, Deacon Bent was emphatically the upright and *faithful man*. In social and domestic life he was most kind and exemplary in all respects. He seldom spoke without a winning smile, and his constant flow of good humor made him always an agreeable companion. He was cheerful and mild in temper, though possessed of very delicate sensibilities. He was a man of great good taste and judgment, and of accurate skill in music and the mechanic arts. From his early years he had faithfully disciplined and cultivated his mind by habits of accurate thinking and careful observation. He thought for himself—thought freely, independently, and had unusual firmness and decision of character, and a power of will, which bound him inflexibly to whatever he thought to be true and right. Still he was candid and open to conviction.

The strength and serenity of his mind, the warmth of his affections, and the beauty of his guileless character, remained unimpaired to the last; and he quietly passed away with almost none of the common infirmities of old age.

*Samuel Blake.*

SAMUEL BLAKE lived at South Boston about eighteen years, and stood deservedly high in the public esteem, as well as in the affections of a large circle of relatives and friends. He was born in Boston, September 13, 1788. There he was brought up, and there he passed the most of his mature life in the pursuit of mercantile business. In the year 1835 he removed to South Boston, having built an elegant and commodious mansion on the spot where his ancestors had lived for six generations. This is the fourth framed house that has occupied the same site. The first having stood nearly a century, and gone much to decay, was taken down in 1732. The second was burned by the British soldiers in the war of the Revolution; and the third was moved off to make room for the present.

This family of the Blakes, in all their generations, have been distinguished for their piety, for their precise and correct deportment in all the relations of life, and for their great accuracy in matters of fact. Many of them have held important offices of honor and trust in the community; and no records of past events are more reliable than those kept by them. *Blake's Annals of Dorchester*, written by the great-grandfather of our present subject, are historical documents of the first importance; and no surveys and plans are more complete and accurate than his.

William Blake, the first ancestor in this country,

was one of the first settlers of Dorchester, having arrived in the ship *Mary & John*, in May, 1630. His son James, it appears, settled here at the *Point*, where he built a house about the year 1680.\* It is creditable to the family, that sixty acres or more of the land, owned by him, were retained as late as the year 1803—and much of it is still retained by them.

As further proof of their skill in research, they have traced their descent, four generations beyond the settlement of this country, to John Blake, of little Baddow, Essex County, England.

The subject of this notice well sustained the general characteristics of his race. He was the diligent, punctual and successful man of business, in whom his associates could always safely confide; a man of sound judgment in business affairs; of a mild and quiet spirit—modest, and unaspiring in his manners, amiable in disposition, of a cheerful temperament, warm-hearted and benevolent, greatly beloved by his family and friends, and much respected by all who knew him.

After a lingering illness of several months, which terminated in dropsy, he died on the 17th of January, 1853, at the age of sixty-four years and four months.

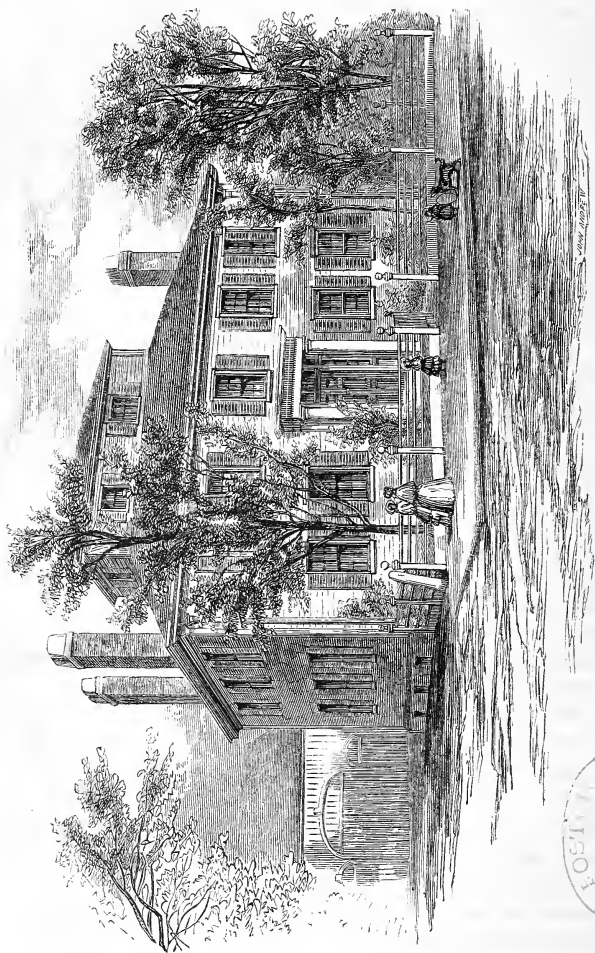
### *Noah Brooks.*

Among the first and most prominent branches of business which have contributed to the growth and prosperity of South Boston, is ship-building. This business was commenced about the close of the war of 1812, by Messrs. Lincoln & Wheelwright, under the superintendence of Mr. Samuel Kent, whose chil-

---

\* Documents lately brought to light show plainly that the above date, rather than 1660 as stated on a previous page, is the correct one.

PROPERTY OF THE  
MAINE GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY  
INCORPORATED 1884.



Dwelling house of Capt. Noah BROOKS, Broadway, South Boston. Erected in 1823.



dren are still residents of South Boston. Mr. Kent was succeeded by his brother-in-law, Capt. NOAH BROOKS, long and favorably known as a public spirited citizen and an honest, upright and conscientious man. Capt. Brooks was born at Scituate, July 7, 1782. He was a resident of South Boston for more than thirty years, and did much, by his active and energetic spirit, as well as by the power of his example, to advance the best interests of the place. He was a large subscriber to the Free Bridge, and one of the committee for building that work. He was one of the original petitioners for the Mechanics Bank, and a prominent Director of that Institution until his death. He was several times elected a member of the Legislature and of the City Council, and was Treasurer and one of the Trustees of the Hawes Fund for many years. He had a rare talent for business, and whatever he undertook was well done. In every measure of public reform, Capt. Brooks either took the lead or lent a ready and active co-operation, and from no good work did he withhold his hand or his heart. Hon. Abbott Lawrence once said of him, when upon a visit to the City of Washington, that he took great pleasure in introducing Capt. Brooks to his southern friends as the best specimen of a true Yankee.

In the social relations of life, and in all that related to his duties as a neighbor and a friend, Capt. B. was attentive, kind and sympathizing, and always ready to oblige. His charities were not few, but they were quietly bestowed. His death took place January 28, 1852, in the 70th year of his age, and was caused by being thrown from his sleigh.

A view of his dwelling, the first built on Broadway between Dorchester and E streets, is here given.

*David Williams.*

DAVID WILLIAMS was born on Governor's Island, in Boston harbor, in the year 1759. In early life he made several voyages to sea; and was for awhile, during the war of the Revolution, engaged in privateering. But the most of his active life was spent in the fishing business, and as a pilot in the harbor, and his residence was at Dorchester Neck. From the peculiar circumstances of his youth, and in fact from the state of the country at the time, Mr. Williams had but little opportunity for any other than self-education. But the natural powers, both of his mind and heart, were correct and well-balanced, and he was remarkable for his sound judgment, discretion, and considerate thoughtfulness; and all that is kind and generous in our nature was strongly marked in his character. Through life he had his full share of trials, but he did not murmur nor complain; he bore them as a christian should. The vices and temptations of a sea-faring life seem to have had no bad effect upon him. From early life he was seriously inclined. But the strong impulse, which led him in earnest to embrace the Christian faith, came not from the pulpit, nor from any of the ordinary means of religious influence. It was imparted during a voyage at sea. On a bright Sabbath morning, when the peace of the elements accorded with that of his own bosom, with the Bible in his hand, he viewed the broad expanse above and beneath, and saw the works of God and his wonders on the deep. *While he was thus musing* upon the great themes presented to his view, *the fire of sacred truth burned*, and it ceased not to burn to his last hour, though he did not publicly profess his faith till late in life.



At the organization of the Hawes Place Church, October 27, 1819, Mr. Williams was baptized, and became one of its original members. From September, 1822, by request, he acted as Deacon of the Church about seven years, and received a vote of thanks for his services in that office. Through life he was strictly temperate and industrious; quiet, and gentle, and every way exemplary in manners; an upright, wise and good man; a devout and practical christian.

One incident of his life, of peculiar interest, seems worthy to be here noted, in the detail in which it was received from him and his brother John, many years ago.

David Williams, then nineteen years old, and his brother John Williams, in his seventeenth year, were among the crew of the privateer brig General Arnold, of 20 guns, and 106 men, which sailed from Boston on Thursday, December 24, 1778. In the afternoon of that day, there was a fall of damp snow, which soon froze to the rigging and about the vessel, rendering her very difficult to manage, and detained her off the Gurnet, in Plymouth harbor. On Friday afternoon, the 25th, the cold greatly increased. The wind rose at N. N. E., and a snow storm began, which by its violence and intense cold was unequalled in the history of New England storms. From the severity of the weather, probably, the precaution was not taken to lighten the brig of her guns, and other disposable lading, which the Messrs. Williams believed would have enabled her to ride over the bar, into the deep tide-soaked snow, where she would have lain secure. Near the dawn of Saturday, the 26th, she parted her cables, struck upon the beach, and bilged. On Saturday P. M., after the utmost

exertion at the pumps, the men were obliged to leave the vessel and themselves to their fate. Sunday, the 27th, was fair, but dreadfully cold. The people of Plymouth made every effort for their relief, without success. When they were seen to return, the crew sunk disheartened, and soon died to the number of seventy-eight. And from the merciless pelting of the billows, which froze hard to them, they looked rather like solid statues of ice, than real human bodies. On Monday, the 28th, the cold had somewhat abated, and the men of Plymouth renewed their efforts with success. They reached the vessel about sunset. Twenty-eight of those frozen, famished and exhausted sufferers were yet alive. Since Friday they had tasted neither food nor drink. They had been huddled together on the quarter deck, with no extra clothing, and no shelter but the skies.

Thus night and day they had borne the raging of the wind and the sea, and the dreadful cold. All that chanced to be saved from below was a keg of rum, of which all who drank, after a brief excitement, sunk into a stupor, from which they never awoke. The rest made a wiser and salutary use of it, by pouring it into their boots. When help arrived, John Williams, who during the storm had been without hat, cap, mittens, boots or shoes, was much frozen, and unable to leave the vessel, and David was attempting to carry him through the deep and half frozen brine, when their deliverers took them both off in safety. Among the living was the captain, James Magee, afterwards the owner of the mansion at Roxbury brook, since the residence of the late Governor Eustis. Captain Magee was a man of noble bearing, and a nobler soul; a true-hearted Irishman, well known and much respected in his day.

John Williams suffered much, through life, from the effects of his shipwreck. He was always lame, having lost the toes from both his feet, one of which became so diseased and painful, that, several years before his death, he submitted to the amputation of it by the late Dr. Miller, of Franklin, which contributed greatly to his comfort for the residue of his life.

The attachment of these excellent men, all the storms of life served only to confirm. After the elder brother lost his consort, and his children separated, the younger invited him into his family, and while they lived they showed a truly child-like affection for each other. Loving brothers in life, they were not long divided in death. The younger died in April, 1834, aged 73 years. The elder died December 4, 1836, aged 77 years. Safe beyond the storms and the shipwrecks of life, they have met where the waves of trouble cannot reach them, nor the billows of temptation assail.

*Hall J. How.*

HALL JACKSON HOW lived at South Boston about eighteen years, and was always forward in every enterprise that might contribute to the prosperity of the place. He was born at Rochester, N.H., February 12th, 1791. At the age of sixteen years, by the death of his father, Dr. James How, an eminent physician of that town, the care of the family and the management of their farm devolved on him. Thus early were his energies called into exercise, and the manly character developed; and he showed an industry, a power of application, and a spirit of enterprise, which indicated the man of business. He had gained from his father a skill in the medical pro-

fession, which was useful to him through life. But his stronger tastes and leanings were for mercantile pursuits. On reaching manhood, therefore, with little capital besides the resources of his own mind, he began business in the country, on a small scale; and enlarging it with the increase of his means, after a few years he removed to Portsmouth, N. H., and afterwards to Boston. By his experience and observation, he had gained a quickness of perception and of judgment, an insight almost intuitive into the laws of trade, which soon gave him a very high rank among the merchants of Boston; and by his promptness and integrity, and his frank and winning manners, he secured their confidence and esteem. His constant personal attention, and the force of his active mind, were given to his employment—and we seldom meet with more despatch, with more accurate and efficient business talent, than was seen in Mr. How.

Mr. How was for several years one of the Trustees of the Hawes Fund. He was also the originator and forwarder of many important enterprises which have contributed to the improvement of South Boston, among which may be mentioned, as being most identified with the growth of the place, the erection of the Mt. Washington Hotel by the Warren Association, the incorporation of the Boston Wharf Co., and the building of the North Free Bridge.

In the quiet walks of social life he was not less distinguished. He was a man of kind and generous affections and refined sensibilities—public spirited and charitable; secretly scattering abroad his bounty, to make glad many desolate hearts.

Of the domestic character of Mr. How, we can hardly speak in terms too strong. As a son, a bro-

ther, a husband, and a parent, few men could be more justly beloved by those to whom he sustained these relations. Exemplary and faithful before his household, he exercised a firm, unyielding restraint; yet with so much wisdom and gentleness, that it was hardly felt to be a restraint. In his general character he was firm and decided, yet with no lack of mildness or candor.

His health had been failing for some years, but he died of acute dysentery, after a few days' illness, on the 17th of August, 1849, at the age of fifty-eight years and six months. He had sustained the conjugal relation twenty-nine years, and left a family of six sons and five daughters. It is remarkable that his was the first death that occurred in the family.

### *Josiah Dunham.*

Prominent among those who have been for a long time identified with the interests and history of South Boston, stands the well-known name of JOSIAH DUNHAM. He was born in New Bedford, March 11, 1775. His father was a sea-captain. The family were among the earlier settlers of Plymouth, the first record of which goes back as far as the year 1635. The branch from which he descended subsequently moved to Martha's Vineyard. When a youth he came to Boston, and served an apprenticeship at the rope-making business with a Mr. Richardson, the father of the Hon. Jeffrey Richardson, of Boston, whose rope-walks extended from Purchase street to Milk street, near to the present location of Pearl street.

He first commenced the manufacture of cordage on his own account in a rope-walk which stood on or

near Boylston street in Boston. In the year 1807 he became the purchaser of several acres of land at South Boston, in the vicinity of B street, and built a residence for himself and a rope-walk, where he continued to carry on the cordage manufacture until the close of the year 1853. During all the years of his residence in South Boston, he was engaged in the building of dwellings and stores, and, without erecting a large number in any one year, yet in the aggregate he was the moving spirit in the erection of more buildings in the place than any other man. Though he did not have the advantage of early education, yet for foresight, energy, perseverance and power of memory, he had few superiors. He was impulsive, easily excited, and an injury, real or supposed, was not soon forgotten. On the other hand, his friendships were strong, his benefactions generous and long continued, and he would often do favors to others even to his own injury. He was an active participator in the efforts for building the North Free Bridge, and was untiring in his zeal for whatever promised to be of advantage to the place of his chosen residence. He served the twelfth ward in the Common Council in the year 1833, and for the three succeeding years was an efficient member of the Board of Aldermen. While a member of the latter board, he felt a deep interest in the grading of the streets of South Boston, but few of which had been, previous to that time, put into a respectable condition. Finding his associates in the Board rather slow in their movements in this work, he followed the example of one, of whom he was an ardent supporter, and in his capacity as one of the Surveyors of the Highways, "took the responsibility." He set men to work in ploughing down and level-

ling up Fourth street and Broadway. When completed, he carried the bills for the same, amounting to some \$2500, before the Aldermen, who with some shrugs of their shoulders, joined with some mild admonitions, and a few smiles at the boldness of the act of their associate, approved the bills and ordered their payment by the City.

In the year 1823, when the Congregational Church was formed which is now known as the Phillips Church, he generously erected a hall on Fourth street for their place of worship, and gave them the rent and other substantial aid, till they erected their church building.

He had a wonderfully strong and vigorous constitution, and died April 28, 1857, being a little more than 82 years of age.

### *John H. Bird.*

JOHN HAWES BIRD was born at South Boston, in September, 1807. His father, Jonathan Bird, Esq., inherited and occupied the patrimonial estate, called the Bird farm, a large tract extending from the *old road* on the north, over the heights to the tide on the south, including most of the northerly, and part of the southerly hill. He was a graduate of Harvard College, in the class of 1782—and cousin to Mr. John Hawes, and so he gave his son that name. His wife was Ann Vincent Woodward, eldest daughter of Joseph Woodward, Esq. He died in the year 1809, when his son was about two years old. He was an excellent man, and greatly beloved. His widow broke up house-keeping soon after the death of her husband, and with the subject of this notice, her only child, returned to live with her father; and there he had his *home* to the day of his death. He knew

no other father than Mr. Woodward, who well discharged the duties of a parent towards him.

Mr. Bird inherited the quiet and amiable disposition of his father, and grew up much respected and beloved. He was fitted for College, chiefly at the Academy in Lexington, and graduated at Providence in the year 1829. He studied law in the office of the Hon. Franklin Dexter, and afterwards visited Europe. But his health was hardly firm enough, and his habits were too active, for sedentary pursuits, and he chose not to enter on the practice of his profession. He took a deep interest in every thing that concerned the prosperity of South Boston, and gave promise of eminent usefulness as a citizen. But the hopes of his friends, and of the public, were soon and suddenly disappointed, by a grievous casualty. On the 10th of June, 1835, he was engaged in business, as usual, in the forenoon, in perfect health. After dinner, he visited the sick bed of the friend to whom he was in a few days to have been married, left for the city, and in an hour was a corpse. In attempting to go aboard a vessel, in which he was interested, and which was about to sail, he fell from the connecting plank, which was laid in a winding position, struck his head upon a spar beside the wharf, and was instantly killed.

Seldom is death attended with so much concern and grief, as on this occasion. The hearts of his friends were bound up in him; and his strict integrity and purity of life, had inspired universal confidence and esteem. He had been a member in the communion of the Hawes Place Church about six years, a Trustee of the Hawes Fund over two years, and a part of the time was Clerk of the Board. Being of a thoughtful turn of mind, and deeply impress-



ed with the uncertainty of life, a few months before his death Mr. Bird made his will. It is dated January 2, 1835—and it seems to have been a special object with him to begin the year with this transaction. After giving a generous legacy to his grandfather, Mr. Woodward, and making ample provision for the support of his mother, he bequeathed one half of his estate to his other nearest relatives, and left the other half in perpetual *Trust* for the maintenance of a female *High School*. The will specifies "*a seminary of the first order, to be established at South Boston.*" At no distant day the fund will be ample for the support of a school, which will be alike honorable to the founder and useful to the place.

### *Romanus Emerson.*

Mr. EMERSON was born at Townsend, September 1, 1782. His father afterwards removed to Hancock, N. H., where he was brought up. His early studies were directed with a view to the Christian ministry. But owing to an impediment in his speech, he left his studies, and after teaching school for a while, learned the carpenter's trade at Charlestown. His three brothers, who survive him, are ministers: viz.—Rev. Reuben Emerson, of South Reading; Rev. Brown Emerson, S. T. D., of Salem; and Rev. Noah Emerson, of Hollis, N. H.

Mr. Emerson lived at South Boston more than forty years. He came here in the year 1810, and kept a small grocery in addition to his trade. He witnessed great changes and improvements here in his time. He was an industrious citizen, frugal and temperate in his manner of life, careful, accurate, and upright in his business transactions,

and faithful and exemplary in his domestic and social relations. He was forward in every movement for social reform, and took a deep interest in the moral progress of society. He formerly sold spirituous drinks, but seeing the dread evils of intemperance, he wholly left off the sale. In the latter years of his life his efforts were zealously engaged in the temperance and anti-slavery movements. He had great command of his temper, and could not easily be provoked to violent anger or resentment.

Mr. Emerson possessed strong reasoning powers, and was an original and independent thinker. But there was something peculiar in the structure of his mind—a defect, perhaps it should be called, which sometimes led him to singular conclusions, of which he was usually very tenacious. For he had a pride of opinion, which he did not easily yield, when he had once made up his mind. He was especially singular in his views of religion. Till late in his life, he had most rigidly adhered to the opinions usually styled *orthodox*, and in the Baptist denomination. From various causes, becoming dissatisfied with these, and most unjustly attributing all the wrongs that have arisen from the mistakes and abuses of religion, to pure religion itself, his mind swung to the opposite extreme. He openly renounced all religious opinions whatever, and died deliberately holding to his speculative unbelief. But Mr. Emerson's speculations did not appear to materially affect his general character. His power of virtuous habit was strong and abiding. The fruits of his early Christian culture and training were seen in his old age, and to the end of his days.

He died on the 10th of October, 1852, at the age of 70 years.

## APPENDIX.

---

### A. (Page 75.)

#### MEMORIAL OF THE COMMITTEE OF THE TOWN OF DORCHESTER AGAINST ANNEXATION.

*To the Honorable Senate and House of Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in General Court assembled:—*

The Memorial of the Subscribers humbly sheweth, that the Inhabitants of Dorchester in Town Meeting, legally assembled on the 23d Day of January, in the year of our Lord 1804, Pursuant to an Order of Notice to consider of the Petition of Wm. Tudor, Esq., Praying the Peninsula called Dorchester Neck may be set off and incorporated with the Town of Boston,

*Voted,* To remonstrate against granting the prayer of said Petition, and chose the Subscribers a committee for that purpose.

They therefore beg leave to state—notwithstanding the representation of Said Petition respecting the Quantity of land in Said Peninsula, the time in which it was incorporated with the Town, the relative situation thereof with respect to the Town of Boston, &c., are just—yet, severing the same from its ancient connection—connected and strengthened by mutual and long-timed friendship—must cause feuds and animosities naturally tending to weaken the bands of society and to discourage the spirit of Industry and enterprise of which the Inhabitants of Dorchester are not wholly destitute.

And they further state,—That since the Incorporation of the Town of Dorchester, the Town of Milton, all that was originally Stoughton, and parts of other Towns, have at different Periods been set off from the first Mentioned Town—and though the remainder is now nearly ten miles in length, it contains little more than seven thousand acres of Land; the southwesterly part is well known to be extremely rough, barren, and of little value,—and the only improvements which can now be made to advantage, are on that part which lies in the north-easterly portion of the town. Should Said Neck, which may be more properly called the head of Dorchester, containing nearly six hundred acres of Land, first in Quality, inviting the Citizens of all Countries to its extensive shore, be annexed to Boston, already the successful rival of every Town in the Commonwealth, the remaining part of the Inhabitants of Dorchester must lose their balance in the scale of Government—and for want of proper objects to draw the Spirit of Enterprise and Industry into action, and means to regain their former station, must remain in the background of their fellow citizens, with a large number of poor to support, many Roads to maintain and new ones to make, and no Diminution of their Town charges.

And though the prosperity and magnificence of the Town of Boston will ever be viewed with pleasure, and its commerce and manufactories be aided and cherished with avidity by the Inhabitants of Dorchester, yet they conceive part of the advantages resulting from the contemplated Bridge justly belongs to them, and should the same be enacted agreeably to the request of William Tudor, Esq., and Gardiner Greene, or otherwise, all the advantages contemplated in the Petition would rush into existence under the patronage of the Town of Dorchester.

And as the Inhabitants of Boston are unwilling to receive that without compensation, which the Inhabitants of Dorchester hold in the highest estimation, and

will relinquish only with the greatest reluctance and deepest regret,

The Subscribers, therefore, in behalf of the Town of Dorchester, humbly pray the Honorable Court to take the Subject into their wise consideration, and not to grant the Prayer of the Said Petition ; but if the Honorable Court shall otherwise determine, that it may be done under such regulations and restrictions as shall give to the Town of Dorchester a just proportion of the advantages.

(Signed) Ebenezer Wales, Stephen Badlam, Samuel Withington, James Robinson, Jr., Ebenezer Tolman, Lemuel Crane, Thomas Moseley, Edward W. Baxter.

*Dated at Dorchester, Jan. 25, 1804.*

---

B. (Page 75.)

MEMORIAL OF THE PETITIONERS IN FAVOR OF ANNEXATION.

*To the Selectmen of the Town of Boston :—*

GENTLEMEN,—Whoever has attentively considered the geography and territorial extent of the town of Boston, which, within its utmost limits, embraces but eleven hundred acres, must be convinced that the present boundaries are too scanty to admit the erection of a large capital, subject to the same municipal jurisdiction ; and from its present flourishing condition, that the period has arrived, when sound policy points to the expediency of making provisions for surmounting this disadvantage.

The central situation of this town, now become a county : the security, beauty and convenience of its harbor, placed at the bottom of one of the fairest and most important Bays within the dominions of the United States, conspire to raise it to the head of all the commercial towns of Massachusetts ; and whilst it is fast progressing to the distinction of being the Emporium of the five Eastern States, common prudence and judicious enterprise must forever secure to it this enviable advantage.

The rapid increase of her population, the various avenues now opening, the shortening the distances and improving the roads leading from the principal inland towns and neighboring sea-ports ; her inestimable foreign commerce, combined with an extensive coasting trade, both annually augmenting and rousing the energies of her citizens, will soon imperiously require an enlargement of the boundaries with which this metropolis is now circumscribed.

The adjacent towns of Roxbury, Cambridge and Charlestown cannot be supposed to consent to surrender the most valuable portions of either of their respective townships, and the seats of their busiest population, to effect this purpose, great as it assuredly is in a national view. But on the southerly quarter of the town, and most advantageously extending upwards of two miles along the port, lies a tract of land almost uninhabited, and comparatively useless ; comprising five hundred and sixty acres, which, if united to Boston, would give that town a superiority which no other capital, New York excepted, can boast of. This peninsula, bounded by the harbor, which it so much contributes to adorn, exhibits such a variety of ground, and excellence of location, as to fully answer the purposes contemplated.

The flats, which at present separate it from the southerly side of the town, admit of their being easily bridged, and the communication might in a few months be completed at an expense insignificant when contrasted with the important benefits necessarily resulting from the project. And when to this statement it is added, that the three avenues leading into Boston have become such crowded streets as to be extremely inconvenient, and oftentimes hazardous, from the numerous carriages of every description that hourly frequent them ; it will be admitted that the opening of a new passage through the least busy part of the Town, and thereby creating an easy, pleasant, and short intercourse with the country, is an object worthy of the public attention, happily

conducting to promote the health, by the exercise and relaxation of her numerous citizens.

The totally unincumbered part of this isolated district of land, lying at the distance of eight hundred and eighty-four yards, and on the side of its nearest approach only six hundred yards, admits of executing a Plan, whenever it shall be thought eligible, of another section of Boston, in which regular and wide streets and symmetry in the buildings, favored with air and aspect, might combine their effects in gradually raising a most desirable circle of suburbs. While the present town would always continue the great focus of business, this quarter of it could provide for the surplus of population, and furnish the inhabitants with suitable sites for houses and other buildings, at prices greatly beneath those in the Town, which have at length become exorbitant, and consequently detrimental to an increase of new citizens, and discouraging to those arts upon which such an infinite variety of trades are dependent.

Impressed with these motives, and with a view to reciprocate advantages, we pray you, Gentlemen, to take the opinion of the inhabitants at large of the town of Boston, upon the subject of this memorial; and upon the merits of which we invite their candid discussion, and to assure them that we shall and do cheerfully consent to the annexation of all our lands lying upon the peninsula aforesaid, to the town of Boston, upon the single condition that the inhabitants will procure a Bridge to be erected between Boston and Dorchester Neck; and as evidence of this our consent, we herewith transmit to you a copy of our petition to the Legislature of the Commonwealth, to enable us to carry this our purpose into immediate and complete effect.

We are, with sentiments of great respect, Gentlemen, your faithful, humble servants, &c.

[Signed by William Tudor, Gardiner Greene, and other Proprietors of Lands at Dorchester Neck.]

## C. (Page 77.)

## BILL ANNEXING DORCHESTER NECK TO BOSTON.

SECT. 1.—*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same,* That that part of Dorchester lying north-east of the following lines, Beginning at a stake and stones at Old Harbor, so called, from the south-west corner of land formerly belonging to John Champney, running north thirty-seven and one half degrees west, to a large elm tree, marked D on the south-west side, and B on the north-east side, standing on land belonging to the heirs of Thomas Bird, deceased; then running the same course to a heap of stones, on the south-west side of the road; thence across the road, the same course, to a heap of stones on the north-west side; thence on the same course, to a black oak tree, standing on a small hammock, marked D on one side and B on the other side, upon land of Ebenezer Clap, jun.; thence the same course till it comes to Boston harbor, with the inhabitants thereon, be, and they hereby are annexed to the town of Boston, in the County of Suffolk; and shall hereafter be considered and deemed to be a part of Boston: *Provided*, That the said tract of land, and the inhabitants thereon, set off as aforesaid, shall be holden to pay all such taxes as are already assessed, or ordered to be assessed by said town of Dorchester, in the same manner as they would have been if this Act had not been passed.

SECT. 2.—*And be it further enacted*, That the Proprietors of said tract shall assign and set apart three lots of land on the same for public use, viz., one lot for the purpose of a public market-place, one lot for a school-house, and one lot for a burial-ground, to the satisfaction and acceptance of the Selectmen of Boston; or in case the said Selectmen and Proprietors shall not agree upon the said lots, it shall be lawful for the Supreme Judicial Court, at any session thereof in the said county of Suffolk, upon application of said Selectmen, to nomi-



nate three disinterested freeholders within the Commonwealth, and not inhabitants of the said town of Boston, to assign and set off the three lots aforesaid by metes and bounds; and the report of the said freeholders, or any two of them, being made and returned to, and accepted by the said Court at any session thereof in said county, shall be final and binding upon all parties: and the lots of land by them assigned and set off as aforesaid, shall thenceforth rest in the said town of Boston forever, without any compensation to be made therefor by the town; but if the person or persons whose lands shall be assigned and set apart as aforesaid, shall demand compensation therefor, the same shall be appraised by three freeholders, to be appointed as aforesaid, who shall also assess upon the other proprietors the sum or sums which each shall be holden to pay to the person whose lands may be thus assigned for public use: and the report of said freeholders, or any two of them, being made and returned to, and accepted by said Court, judgment thereon shall be final, and execution awarded, as in cases of reports by referees under a rule of Court.

SECT 3.—*And be it further enacted*, That the Selectmen of the said town shall be and hereby are authorized to lay out such streets and lanes through the said tract, as in their judgment may be for the common benefit of said Proprietors, and of said town of Boston, a reasonable attention being paid to the wishes of the Proprietors; and in case of disagreement between the Selectmen and Proprietors, or either of them, the same proceedings shall be had as are provided by law in other cases for laying out town ways: *Provided only*, That no damages or compensation shall be allowed to any Proprietor for such streets and lanes as may be laid out within twelve months from the passing of this Act: *And provided also*, That the town of Boston shall not be obliged to complete the streets laid out by the Selectmen pursuant to this Act, sooner than they may deem it expedient so to do.

## D. (Page 80.)

## LAND OWNED BY MR. GOULD—THE FOSTER ESTATE.

Besides the reference, on page 80, to the large amount of real estate held by Abraham Gould at Dorchester Neck, at the time of its annexation to Boston, allusion is also made, on pages 247 and 251, to extensive tracts of land held by him, partly inherited by his wife from the Fosters, and partly belonging to him by purchase. A plan is now before us, of "a piece of pasture, mowing and salt marsh," containing 24 acres, belonging to Dr. Stephen Foster and Mr. Gould in 1788. This lot is bounded south-easterly about 24 rods by the "road leading to Castle William," now Dorchester street; south-westerly 67 rods by land of Mr. Gould; north-westerly 64 rods to the sea, by widow Foster's land, the house itself coming just on the widow's side; northerly 36 rods by the sea or Boston harbor; and north-easterly 76 rods by land of Oliver Wiswall; a cart path running the whole length of this last line from the sea to Dorchester street. Another plan, still later, comprises two lots adjoining each other, owned by Mr. Gould alone—one of about 29 acres, and the other about 23 acres. This plan included the first-named piece, and extended, east and west, from Dorchester street to D street, and, north and south, from the beach to Nook lane. He also owned land east of Dorchester street, and near the Hawes Place Church. Most of these extensive tracts of land passed out of Mr. Gould's hands before his death, some of them being sold for house-lots at greatly advanced prices.

On pages 31, 32, 33 and 67, the Foster house, which stood on land eventually owned by Mr. Gould, is spoken of, and described as the most elegantly furnished one on the Neck. By a plan drawn in 1749, it appears that this was a two-story house. After its destruction by the British in 1776, a one-story house was erected on its site, as shown by plans drawn in 1788. This latter house, with the land around it, came into Mr. Gould's

possession about the year 1803. It was probably occupied by him before this, but very soon after he built and moved into the brick house on the west, near by, now adjoining the Bigelow School-house and owned by Mr. W. W. Allen. The Foster house was afterwards kept by a Mr. Healy, as a hotel, to which a bowling alley was attached, and this was for several years a fashionable afternoon resort for some of the then "solid men of Boston." One or more of our present no less substantial citizens can remember setting up nine-pins, when boys, in this place. The house itself, though not very old, went to decay, and was taken down about the year 1830. When the first part of this work was written, the cellar was to be seen, with two ancient elms spreading forth the same branches which had afforded a summer shade to several generations of the Foster family. These were on the lot near the easterly corner of E and Fourth streets, now occupied by the elegant residence of Francis Maguire, and the two handsome dwelling-houses of the Messrs. Fisk. The house was about half way between Fourth and Silver streets, and the barn 12 rods north of it, on a spot now near the centre of Broadway, in front of the present Lyceum Hall. This was the barn, it will be recollected, in which Mrs. Foster's hired man, in 1773, concealed the tea clandestinely gathered from the seashore after the memorable throwing over-board of that article in Boston harbor. Two or three rods south-east of the house, where the Thacher house now stands, was the unsheltered well, with its wooden curb and windlass, and, doubtless, its "old oaken bucket" attached.

On the plan drawn by the British General at the beginning of the Revolutionary war, which has been copied for this work, the Foster house is represented as directly on Nook lane. But several ancient plans of land belonging to this estate, show that the gate leading to the house was on the lane, but the house itself was 24 rods from it. A pathway led from the gate, north-easterly, the above distance, to the house. This

gate must have been at a spot now on the southerly side of Fifth street, in a south-western direction from the house. No fences are represented around the house on the plans drawn in 1788. The "yard-room," as it may have been called, was therefore ample, and is now occupied by more houses than were contained in all Mattapanock at the time of its annexation to Boston.

The lane alluded to, sometimes called "the way," and sometimes, in the plans, a "Lane Leeding to Nuke," branched off from the Causeway, or Dorchester street, a little south of the present corner of Seventh street. In 1803, it seems to have run at first nearly in a northerly direction, till within 15 or 20 rods of the gate to the Foster house, when it took a more westerly course, and extended—not however in a very direct line—to the vicinity of Nook hill, or near the present corner of Fourth and B streets—and passing thence south of Fourth street to A street. Nook lane formed the south-western boundary of many acres of land then belonging to Mr. Gould.

Various members of the Foster family have at different times owned land in other parts of the place, some of which never came into the possession of Mr. Gould. James Foster, in 1694, purchased of the other heirs of Hopestill, their right in a twelve-acre piece of upland on the southerly side of the "highway leading towards Castle Island," for which he paid them "fforty pounds currant money of New England." The deed of conveyance in this sale is now in a good state of preservation, and is quite a curiosity. It is written lengthwise on a piece of parchment 29 inches long and 11½ wide, the lines extending nearly the whole length and perfectly straight and uniform. It is a most beautiful piece of penmanship, and is ornamented with flourishes and the usual display of German-text words. It contains the signatures of Edward Brown, shopkeeper, and Elizabeth his wife (formerly wife of Hopestill Foster, deceased); Hopestill Foster, gun maker; Samuel Foster, goldsmith; Timothy Nash, merchant, and Mary his wife (one of the

daughters of Hopestill); and Elizabeth Foster, spinster. The seals affixed to the names are of red sealing-wax, on each of which is impressed a different design. These are secured by melted wax to separate strips of parchment, which are firmly looped in to the bottom of the deed—and each name is written on the deed by the side of its loop and seal. The witnesses' names and the acknowledgments are on the back, where is also written, in the same style as inside, "Ehizir Moody, Scr:". It would seem that there were trees and bushes then growing here, as it is stated in this deed, in the elaborate and precise style of the time, that the grantors "by these presents doe ffully, freely, clearly and absolutely give, grant, bargain, sell, alien, enfeoffe, release, convey and confirm, unto the said James Foster," &c., the land alluded to, "from henceforth and forevermore," "together with all and singular the trees, timber, wood and underwood standing, lyeing and growing thereon." We are also informed, on good authority, that a lady who died in Milton about eighteen years ago, at the age of 96, used to tell of picking "huckleberries" at Dorchester Neck, when a child, and of finding the largest ones there she had ever seen.\*

---

\* The same lady, who was a lineal descendant of Major-General Humphrey Atherton, whose monument and inscription in the old Dorchester burying-ground have been objects of interest for nearly two hundred years, was in the habit of relating the following account of an occurrence somewhat connected with our peninsula. Her grandfather's house, in Dorchester, was probably the one in which the General lived, and was situated near what is now the south-erly corner of Dorchester avenue and Pond street. Here she frequently visited. On rising, one morning, her grandfather saw a bear under the trees near the house, eating pears. He immediately called the nearest neighbors, who came with their guns and dogs. The latter at once attacked the bear, who retreated across the land connected with the Moseley homestead, to the marsh below it and to the salt water — the men being unable to fire at him without endangering the dogs. He was driven into the bay, and swam towards Little Neck, the dogs not following him further. The bear was now fired upon and wounded, and with difficulty reached the opposite South Boston shore. The men were soon on the spot, and found

It may likewise be added that Deacon John Clapp, of Roxbury, once found a wild duck's nest among the bushes on a little hammock a few rods south-east of the present iron foundries on Dorchester Avenue. This was probably about the time alluded to by the late Mr. Samuel Adams, the wire-cage maker, when he said in Faneuil Hall that he remembered when South Boston was a howling wilderness!

In 1705, Standfast Foster conveyed to his brother James his right in 8 acres of salt marsh at Dorchester Neck, lying, as the deed expresses it, "on the westward side of the aforesaid Neck." It was bounded on the "westerly side with the sea, easterly with a Creeck that run up towards the quarry and partly with the medow of s<sup>d</sup> Standfast Foster called the quarry medow, northerly with the medow or marsh of John and Preserved Capen, and southerly with a Creeck."

---

E. (Page 84.)

ACT IN PART AUTHORIZING THE ERECTION OF THE BOSTON  
SOUTH BRIDGE.

SECT. 1.—*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, That William Tudor, Gardiner Greene, Jonathan Mason, and Harrison Gray Otis, Esquires, so long as they shall continue proprietors as aforesaid, together with those who are, and shall become their associates, shall be a Corporation and Body Politic, under the name of The Proprietors of the Boston South Bridge; and by that name may sue and prosecute,*

---

him nearly exhausted with loss of blood; he was easily despatched, and the carcass carried home in triumph. Before night the bear was cooked, and an entertainment given in the evening, to which all the neighbors were invited. This story has been handed down in one branch of the family with such minuteness, that it is even told which of the ladies relished the bear's meat, and which were unable to eat it.

and be sued and prosecuted to final judgment and execution, and do and suffer all other acts and things, which Bodies Politic may or ought to do and suffer; and that said Corporation shall have full power and authority to make, have and use a common seal, and the same to break, alter and renew at pleasure.

SECT. 3.—*And be it further enacted*, That for the purpose of reimbursing the said Proprietors of the said Bridge, the money to be expended in building and supporting the same, and of indemnifying them, a toll be, and hereby is granted and established for the benefit of said Corporation, according to the rates following, viz.—For each single horse cart, sled or sleigh, *six cents*; one person and horse, *four cents*; each wheelbarrow, handcart, and every other vehicle capable of carrying like weight, *two cents*; each single horse and chaise, chair, or sulkey, *twelve cents*; coaches, chariots, phaetons and curricles, *seventeen cents* each; all other wheel carriages, or sleds, drawn by more than one beast, *eight cents* each; neat cattle or horses passing over said Bridge, exclusive of those rode or in carriages or teams, *two cents* each; swine and sheep, *six cents* for each dozen, and at the same rate for a greater or less number; and in all cases the same toll shall be paid for all carriages passing said Bridge, whether the same be loaded or not loaded; and to each team one man and no more shall be allowed, as a driver, to pass free from paying toll; and at all times, when the toll-gatherer shall not attend to his duty, the gate or gates shall be left open; and the said toll shall commence at the day of the first opening of the said Bridge for passengers, and shall continue for and during the term of seventy years from the said day, and be collected as shall be prescribed by the said Corporation.

SECT. 4.—*And be it further enacted*, That the said Bridge shall be built of good and sufficient materials, not less than forty feet wide, and well covered with plank or timber, suitable for such a Bridge, with sufficient rails on each side for the safety of travellers and

protection of foot passengers ; and the said Bridge shall be kept accommodated with not less than twenty lamps, which shall be well supplied with oil, and lighted in due season, and kept burning until midnight ; and there shall also be made a good and sufficient draw or passageway, at least thirty feet wide in the channel over which said Bridge shall be built, proper for the passing and re-passing of vessels, through which vessels may pass free of toll ; and shall also erect at said draw, and maintain in good repair, a well-constructed and substantial pier or wharf on each side of the said Bridge and adjoining to the draw, every way sufficient for vessels to lie at securely ; and the said draw shall be lifted for all vessels without delay and without toll, except for boats passing for pleasure ; and it shall be lawful for the Proprietors of said Bridge to make the leaves of said draw twenty feet long instead of the width of said Bridge ; and the said Bridge shall be kept in good, safe and passable repair for the term of seventy years, to be computed as aforesaid, and at the expiration of said term, shall be surrendered in like repair to the Commonwealth, who shall be deemed the successor of said Corporation ; and at the several places where the said toll shall be received, there shall be erected by the said Corporation, and exposed to open view constantly, a board or sign, with the rates of toll and all the tollable articles fairly and legibly written thereon in large or capital letters.

SECT. 5.—*And be it further enacted*, That the Proprietors of said Bridge shall pay to the Master of every vessel that shall be loaded and of more than twenty tons register measure that shall pass through said draw, for the purpose of unloading her cargo, *five cents* a ton for each and every ton said vessel shall measure, and the like sum of *five cents* a ton to the Master of each and every vessel of more than twenty tons burthen that shall pass down and through said draw, loaded, on her outward passage. *Provided, however*, that the same vessel passing up and down, though loaded, shall not



be paid for more than one passage. And it shall be lawful, at any period after three years from the passing of this act, for the Proprietors of said Bridge or the Directors of the Roxbury Canal, to make application to the Governor, who, with the advice of Council, is hereby authorized, upon such application in writing, desiring that a revision of such premium of *five cents* as aforesaid, may be made, to appoint three impartial men to hear the parties, examine the premises, and increase or diminish said premium of *five cents* as they shall think just; and their award, signed by them or the major part of them, sealed, and certified to the Governor, and by him published, shall be binding upon all parties, and shall be the sum in future to be paid;—And in like manner and by similar application and process, the same premium may be increased or diminished at the expiration of every five years, successively, during the term aforesaid.

SECT. 7.—*And be it further enacted*, That if the said Corporation shall refuse or neglect, for the space of three years after the passing of this Act, to build and complete the said Bridge, then this Act shall be void and of none effect.

SECT. 8.—*Be it further enacted*, That in case the Proprietors of said Bridge or any Toll-gatherer, or officer by them appointed, shall neglect or refuse to open the draw, or unnecessarily detain any vessel about to pass, the said Corporation shall forfeit and pay for every such refusal, neglect, or unreasonable detention, a sum not exceeding *fifty dollars*, nor less than *twenty dollars*, to be recovered by the owner or owners of such vessels in any Court proper to try the same, by a special action on the case.

*In the House of Representatives,*

*March 5, 1804.*

This bill, having had three several readings, passed to be enacted.

H. G. OTIS, *Speaker.*

*In the Senate, March 6, 1804.*

This bill, having had two several readings, passed to be enacted.

DAVID COBB, *President.*

*March 6, 1804—By the Governor Approved.*

CALEB STRONG.

*A true copy—Attest,*

JOHN AVERY, *Sec'y.*

The fifth Section was intended to remunerate the citizens of Roxbury for the damage which it was supposed would result to them from the building of the bridge.

---

F. (Page 94.)

AN ACT ESTABLISHING A FREE BRIDGE IN THE CITY  
OF BOSTON.

SECT. 1.—*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same,* That the City Government of the City of Boston are hereby authorized and empowered to build and construct, or cause to be built and constructed, a Free Bridge, with one or more suitable and sufficient draws across the water and over the channel, in or near a direction in a straight line from or near Sea street, in Boston, to the newly made land in South Boston, and nearly in the direction of the Dorchester Turnpike, and to erect a Wharf, or Pier, on each side of said Bridge near said draws, for the accommodation of vessels passing through said Bridge; said Bridge and Wharves to be built upon such terms and conditions, and under such restrictions and regulations, as to them may appear suitable and proper, and in such manner as to cause no material obstruction to the ebb and flow of the water through and under the same. *Provided, however,* That the said City of Boston shall be held to make compensation to any person or Corporation

whose land shall be appropriated to the use of said Bridge, and also to any person or Corporation who may sustain damage by the obstruction of navigation, caused by the erection of said Bridge.

SECT. 2.—*Be it further enacted*, That no toll or duty shall ever be exacted or paid for any travel over said Bridge, or passing the draws of the same, and the said City shall always be held liable to keep said Bridge and draw in good repair, and to raise the draw of said Bridge, and afford all necessary and proper accommodation to vessels that have occasion to pass the same by night or by day, and shall keep the said Bridge sufficiently lighted; and if any vessel is unreasonably delayed or hindered in passing said draw, by the negligence of said City, or of their agents, in discharging the duties enjoined on them by this Act, the owners or commander of such vessel shall recover reasonable damages therefor of said City, in an action on the case, before any Court proper to try the same, which action shall be commenced, heard and tried, in either of the Counties of Middlesex or Essex; and if the said City shall not, within three years from the passing of this Act, locate, construct, build and complete said Bridge, agreeably to the provisions of this Act, then this Act shall be void.

SECT. 3.—*Be it further enacted*, That any person or Corporation sustaining any damage by the building of said Bridge, Wharves, or Piers, or from the exercise of any of the rights or powers hereby granted as aforesaid, may apply (if within one year from the time any such damage may have happened) to the Court of Common Pleas, within either of the Counties of Middlesex or Essex, for a Committee to be appointed to estimate the damage; and upon such application the Court, after thirty days' notice, to said City to appear and show cause why such Committee should not be appointed, shall, if no good cause be shown to the contrary, appoint 3 or 5 disinterested freeholders, within the County in which such application shall have been made, at the expense of said City, which Committee, being first duly sworn be-

fore some Justice of the Peace, to be nominated by said Court, and giving due notice to both parties to appear, if they see fit, for a hearing before them, shall proceed to the duties of their appointment; and they shall first inquire whether any damage has been sustained from the causes aforesaid, and if any, they shall estimate the same, and where the damage is annual, they shall so declare the same, in their report, and shall make return of their doings as soon as may be into the said Court; and upon the acceptance of said report, judgment may be given thereon, with reasonable costs to the party prevailing. *Provided, however,* That either party, after the return of said report, may claim a trial by jury, and the Court shall thereupon stay judgment on said report, and trial shall be had by jury at the bar of said Court; and if the party applying for a jury shall not obtain, in case it be the original applicant, an increase of damages, or in case it be the original respondent, a decrease of the damages awarded by the Committee, such party shall pay reasonable costs of such trial by jury, otherwise shall recover reasonable costs; and upon any judgment rendered upon the report of such Committee, or the verdict of such jury, the Court may issue its execution accordingly, and also from year to year, where the damages awarded are annual, on motion of the party entitled thereto; and an action of debt may be maintained on such judgment; and if upon notice to such City as aforesaid, to show cause why such Committee should not be appointed, said City shall appear and deny the applicant's title to the land damaged, or claim a title to do what is complained of without the payment of damages, or for an agreed composition, the Court shall first order a trial of the issue at the bar of said Court, or if there be an issue in law, shall try it themselves, and in either case, either party may appeal to the Supreme Judicial Court as in other cases, and a certificate of the determination of the Sup. Jud. Court, on such appeal, in favor of the original applicant, shall be filed in said Court of Common Pleas, before such Committee

shall be appointed; and where annual damages are awarded by said Committee, or said jury, and judgment had accordingly, each party shall be entitled, after two years, to apply to said Court of Common Pleas, for an increase or decrease of said damages, and thereupon the same proceedings shall be had as upon the original application.

[Approved by the Lt. Governor, February 25, 1825.]

---

G. (Page 157.)

EXTRACTS FROM THE WILL OF JOHN HAWES.

“I give and bequeath unto the said James Humphries, Henry Gardner, and Ebenezer Everett, or such of them as may be living at my decease, a lot of land situated at South Boston, containing about eight acres, inclusive of the roads laid out through the same, on which my dwelling-house now stands; upon special trust and confidence that they cause the same to be secured and applied to the following purposes, viz.: For the use of all such persons as shall hereafter reside at said South Boston; that is to say, one half or moiety of the income and proceeds of said lot of land to be appropriated and applied forever by the said trustees, their associates and successors, to the support and maintenance of the gospel ministry, of the Congregational denomination, in and over the first Christian Church and Society of the same denomination, which may be formed, incorporated, and legally organized in said South Boston; and which said Church and Society shall congregate and worship in a house to be erected on a lot of land which I have appropriated to the use of the gospel ministry, and given by deed, bearing date of June 13, 1807, to the inhabitants of said South Boston, for said use. And the other half and moiety of the income and proceeds of said lot of land, as aforesaid devised, to be appropriated and applied forever, by the aforesaid trustees, their associates and successors, for the purpose of establishing and sup-

porting public schools in said South Boston, in such way and manner as in the opinion of said trustees shall most tend to the benefit and advantage of the inhabitants of the said South Boston.”

SECT. 23. “I furthermore give and devise to the said Humphries, Gardner, and Everett, or such of them as shall be living at my decease, the land which I have lately purchased of William Fiske, with the two dwelling-houses, two workshops, and other buildings on the same standing, situated at the south part of Boston, near the Boston line on Boston Neck, so called, together with all the rest, residue, and remainder of my real estate, of every description, upon special trust and confidence that they cause the income and proceeds of the premises to be disposed of and appropriated as follows, viz. :

“*First*—To discharge such of my debts and legacies as my personal estate may be insufficient to pay. *Secondly*—To be applied in the altering, repairing and improvement of the premises in such way and manner as the said devisees shall think most for the advantage of the same. *Thirdly*—To be appropriated to the use and purposes enumerated in the twenty-second clause of this Instrument, until the income of the same, and the income and proceeds of the estate in said twenty-second clause devised, shall have so increased and accumulated, as in the opinion of the said devisees, their associates and successors aforesaid, to answer all the purposes by me intended, as before described. *And lastly*—From and after that period the net income of the premises and improvements of the same shall be, by the said trustees, their associates and successors aforesaid, applied to the establishment of a second Congregational Church and Society, in said South Boston, at such place as the said trustees, their associates and successors, shall name and appoint; to the settlement and support of a pious Christian minister or ministers, over the same; and for erecting and maintaining a house of public worship for the same; and for the support and encouragement of such

other seminaries of learning, and in such way and manner, as the said trustees, their associates and successors, shall think for the honor of God and the good and happiness of the inhabitants of South Boston aforesaid, and their posterity."

SECT. 24. "As to all the residue of my personal estate, of every description, I do hereby give and bequeath the same to the said Humphries, Gardner and Everett, or such of them as shall be living at my decease, to be, after the payment of my just debts and legacies, applied and appropriated by the said legatees, their associates and successors, to the purpose of erecting and maintaining a meeting-house for religious worship, on the land above referred to in this instrument, as already given by deed to the inhabitants of South Boston. But in case a meeting-house should be built on said land before my decease, then the said Humphries, Gardner and Everett, the survivor or survivors as aforesaid, their associates and successors, shall apply said residue of my personal estate for the support and maintenance of such gospel minister, or ministers, of the Congregational denomination, as may be settled in and over the church and society, that shall worship in said house.

---

## H. (Page 193.)

### INSTRUCTION OF LAURA BRIDGMAN.

Although an account has been given of the peculiar condition of Laura Bridgman, and of the causes which in her childhood led to the loss of several of her senses, the reader may be interested in the following abridged statement, by Dr. Howe, of the method adopted in teaching her to read and to communicate her own thoughts to others:

"For a while after she came to the institution she was much bewildered; and after waiting about two weeks, until she became acquainted with her new locality, and somewhat familiar with the inmates, the at-

tempt was made to give her knowledge of arbitrary signs, by which she could interchange thoughts with others.

“There was one of two ways to be adopted : either to go on to build up a language of signs on the basis of the natural language which she had already commenced herself, or to teach her the purely arbitrary language in common use : that is, to give her a sign for every individual thing, or to give her a knowledge of letters, by combination of which, she might express her idea of the existence, and the mode and condition of existence of any thing. The former would have been easy, but very ineffectual ; the latter seemed very difficult, but, if accomplished, very effectual. I determined therefore to try the latter.

“The first experiments were made by taking articles in common use, such as knives, forks, spoons, keys, &c., and pasting upon them labels with their names printed in raised letters. These she felt very carefully, and soon, of course, distinguished that the crooked lines *s p o o n*, differed as much from the crooked lines *k e y*, as the spoon differed from the key in form.

“Then small detached labels, with the same words printed upon them, were put into her hands ; and she soon observed that they were similar to the ones pasted on the articles. She showed her perception of this similarity by laying the label *k e y* upon the key, and the label *s p o o n* upon the spoon. She was encouraged here by the natural sign of approbation, patting on the head.

“The same process was then repeated with all the articles which she could handle ; and she very easily learned to place the proper labels upon them. It was evident, however, that the only intellectual exercise, was that of imitation and memory. She recollected that the label *b o o k* was placed upon a book, and she repeated the process first from imitation, next from memory, with only the motive of love of approbation, but apparently without the intellectual perception of any relation between the things.



“After a while, instead of labels, the individual letters were given to her on detached bits of paper: they were arranged side by side so as to spell *b o o k*, *k e y*, &c.; then they were mixed up in a heap, and a sign was made for her to arrange them herself, so as to express the words *b o o k*, *k e y*, &c.; and she did so.

“Hitherto, the process had been mechanical, and the success about as great as teaching a very knowing dog a variety of tricks. The poor child had sat in mute amazement, and patiently imitated every thing her teacher did; but now the truth began to flash upon her; her intellect began to work: she perceived that here was a way by which she could herself make up a sign of anything that was in her own mind, and show it to another mind; and at once her countenance lighted up with a human expression. It was no longer a dog, or parrot: it was an immortal spirit, eagerly seizing upon a new link of union with other spirits! I could almost fix upon the moment when this truth dawned upon her mind, and spread its light to her countenance. I saw that the great obstacle was overcome; and that henceforward nothing but patient and persevering, but plain and straightforward, efforts were to be used.

“The result, thus far, is quickly related, and easily conceived: but not so was the process; for many weeks of apparently unprofitable labor were passed before it was effected.

“When it was said above, that a sign was made, it was intended to say, that the action was performed by her teacher, she feeling his hands, and then imitating the motion.

“The next step was to procure a set of metal types, with the different letters of the alphabet cast upon their ends; also a board, in which were square holes, into which holes she could set the types; so that the letters on their ends could alone be felt above the surface.

“Then, on any article being handed to her—for instance, a pencil, or a watch—she would select the component letters, and arrange them on her board, and read them with apparent pleasure.

“She was exercised for several weeks in this way, until her vocabulary became extensive; and then the important step was taken of teaching her how to represent the different letters by the position of her fingers, instead of the cumbrous apparatus of the board and types. She accomplished this speedily and easily, for her intellect had begun to work in aid of her teacher, and her progress was rapid.”

---

I. (Page 200.)

SOUTH BOSTON MEMORIAL, IN 1847.

*To his Honor the Mayor, the Aldermen, and the Common Council of the City of Boston :*

The undersigned, members of a Committee appointed by a public meeting of the inhabitants of Ward 12, ask leave respectfully to represent :

That the Peninsula, formerly called Dorchester Neck, and now called South Boston, contains a population of 12,000, which is rapidly increasing in numbers and in wealth, and which, judging the future by the past, will reach 30,000 in ten years, and 100,000 in twenty-five years :

That it has eight Churches, two Grammar and seventeen Primary Schools, besides Private Seminaries ; a Lyceum, Bank, and Insurance Office ; also Wharves, Ship Yards, Factories, Foundries, &c. :

That it has real and personal property valued at six million dollars, upon which was paid the last year a tax of thirty-one thousand dollars ; and which is estimated at forty thousand dollars for the current year :

That it has a superficial area nearly as great as was that of the old town of Boston :

That it has not only the capacity, but the actual material necessary for a separate and independent municipal existence :

That it has no natural connection with, much less any necessary dependence upon, the City of Boston, being separated from it by a deep and navigable channel :

That its municipal union with the city is merely arbitrary and political, for the continuance of which there can be no good reason except reciprocity of advantages :

That heretofore most of the advantages of the union have been reaped by the City proper, while the disadvantages have fallen upon South Boston :

That it has paid a considerable portion of the City taxes, such as those for widening, paving and lighting the streets, without anything like an adequate return of benefits from the City expenditures :

That it seems to have been considered, as foreign possessions are too frequently considered, a convenient appendage from which the central government might derive profit in various ways :

That it has sometimes been treated as the Botany Bay of the City, into which could be thrust those establishments which the City Fathers would consider nuisances in the neighborhood of their own private dwellings, such as Alms Houses, Prisons, and Small-pox Hospitals :

That several measures of great public importance are now and long have been called for, which the City government will not allow the inhabitants of South Boston to adopt, and which it neglects to adopt itself, such as opening streets and establishing official "*levels*" for buildings :

That justice to the present and to the future inhabitants of this beautiful peninsula, demands that there should be a change either in its municipal relation with the City of Boston proper, or in the policy which has hitherto characterised that relation.

In support of which representations, we would respectfully ask your attention to the facts and considerations set forth in the following

### MEMORIAL.

This peninsula, equal in size and beauty to its more fortunate rival, Trimount, was the ancient Mattapan of

the Indians, and was regarded with peculiar favor by those simple children of the forest, who looked for natural beauty, and sweet springs, and sunny slopes, rather than facilities for fortification and advantages for commerce. Here, tradition tells us, they loved to live; and here, their numerous relics show, they loved to lie when dead. The exact site of Powow Point, so celebrated in Indian tradition, is still known. Jutting farther out into the bay than Trimount, and more accessible from all points of the South shore, it was a favorite resort of the natives for the periodical celebration of rude religious festivals; and it may be that their veneration for the place was increased by their knowledge of that curious and bountiful spring of sweet and sparkling water which comes gushing up from the bottom of the sea near the shore.

But the age passed away, and with it the red race: and Mattapan, that had so kindly yielded to them all her favors when alive, could only shelter in her bosom the bones of their dead. A new race appeared, and were equally welcome to her impartial favor. When the first settlers of Boston and Dorchester began to possess land beyond their immediate homestead, Mattapan fell to the lot of Dorchester, as more naturally belonging to it, and the people thereof used it as a pasture for their cattle. It was an island at high water, and they had only to build a few rods across the narrow neck, and make it a secure enclosure at all times.

The name of Mattapan was gradually forgotten; the Pilgrim Fathers began to talk of Dorchester Neck as their peculiar property, and to consider that they were granting a favor by permitting the poor relics of a people whom they had "scattered and peeled," to come once in the year upon their sad pilgrimage to Powow Point.

But time, that ever contrives to lift justice up, however deep she may have been trodden down, rolled quietly on, and Boston began to covet this fair pasturage, and a contest arose, and the weaker went to the

wall, and Boston treated the sons of Dorchester as their fathers had treated the Indians; they had to sigh for their lost pasturage, though not as the Indians had mourned for Powow Point; and finally Dorchester Neck became South Boston. May that name be lasting, and may it never be that even-handed justice shall call upon our children to bestow another and more appropriate one.

The history of this peninsula can hardly be mentioned without suggesting to all the occasion when the Father of his Country availed himself of its Heights to drive a hostile garrison from the town of Boston, and made South Boston the means of saving the City.

The history of South Boston, as part of Boston, begins with its final annexation by an Act of the General Court in 1804; and with that very act began the partial and injudicious policy which has since characterised the union. The condition of the annexation was, that a bridge should be built, and it was for the manifest interest of the newly acquired territory, and for the real though then less apparent interest of the whole town, that the bridge should be so placed as to give easy access to the centre of business. Indeed a company had been formed with the view of building a bridge leading from Sea street to South Boston; and had it then been constructed, the growth of the peninsula would have received an immediate impulse. But this was a consideration secondary to that of the pecuniary interests of some of the land owners of the South end of Boston, which required that the bridge should terminate near the "Neck lands;" and so, instead of being built straight in the direction of the *travel*, it was placed at right angles to that direction; and for twenty-five years the inhabitants of South Boston, when they wanted to go to State street or to "town meeting," were obliged either to take a boat, and go northward in the direction in which the bridge should have run, or else to travel westward, in which direction the bridge really was, and so to make a right-angled journey.

During all this time the residents of the peninsula made many and strenuous efforts to obtain direct and easy communication with a town to which they were wedded for better or for worse [for better, it seemed, so far as regarded the inhabitants of the town; for worse, as far as regarded themselves], but their efforts were defeated by those Bostonians whose interests were always preferred to those of mere South Bostonians.

It was not until 1826, that leave was obtained to build the new free bridge by which they could go more directly to the centre of the town; nor would it have been obtained even then, if the interests of many towns lying along the South shore had not called for it. The bridge was built in 1828 by the owners of the land in South Boston, and by residents there, and by them *presented* to the City!

The opening of this communication showed at once all the natural advantages and facilities of the western part of this peninsula, for in a few years it was covered with houses, stores and factories; and the population increased six fold in a short time. Equally apparent were the good effects upon the parts of the City proper, adjacent to the point of junction. The nuisances of Sea street disappeared, and upon the marsh of the South Cove sprang up, as by magic, streets and houses.

But during the twenty-five years in which the energies of South Boston had been cramped, and her growth stunted, what efforts had to be used, what obstacles to be encountered, what defeats sustained, before a measure so consistent with sound policy and plain justice could be carried! If any one should now question whether the best interests of the whole City, as well as of South Boston, had been promoted by this measure, he would be considered as insane. Nevertheless, at this moment another Avenue to the City, farther east than the old ones, begins to be called for by the same sound policy and even justice which called for them; but in order to obtain it, the same battles are to be fought, the same defeats sustained, and the same delays encoun-

tered, before there will be, what there must finally be—a complete union between the two peninsulas, and a disappearance of the intervening flats.

During the period of twenty-five years which elapsed between the opening of the old and new avenue, the population of this peninsula went on slowly increasing rather in spite of its municipal connection with the distant town, than in consequence of it. Indeed the inhabitants had little to remind them of their dependence upon Boston except the inconvenience arising from the want of local authorities to regulate their local affairs, and the annual visit of the town officers in the shape of assessors of taxes.

While they were paying their full proportion of taxes for widening and paving, and lighting and watching the streets of the City proper, their own streets were not only uncared for, but they were not even accepted by the City. At some seasons they were almost impassable on account of the mud; and they were lighted only by the moon and stars at night. Most of what was done for them was by voluntary contributions among the inhabitants, who in one season paid about fifteen hundred dollars for this purpose, in addition to paying their proportion for keeping the streets of the City in such a pleasing contrast with their own.

This neglect of the actual condition of the streets was not, however, the worst feature of the case; that only made them very bad at the time, but by refusing to establish the *grades and levels*, the City government placed an immense obstacle in the way of the growth and improvement of the place. Some were afraid to build, lest in a few years the street should be dug away in front of their house, and leave their door-sill ten feet in the air; or be filled up so as to turn their parlors into basements, and bring their chamber windows upon a level with the side-walk. Some who did build after obtaining all the information they could, are at this moment suffering for their confidence in public fairness.

Nor is this a matter of past history alone; at this

very day, when South Boston is equal in point of population to the fifth town in Massachusetts, a citizen thereof cannot obtain a level upon which to build his house with any legal guaranty for its continuance. It is within our positive knowledge, that citizens of substance are at this moment prevented from building houses, by the apprehension that in a few years they may be undermined or buried up.

But it was not alone in respect to streets, that the inequality of taxation was felt by the inhabitants of South Boston; they paid their share for the expense of common sewers, for removing offal from houses, for the police, for the night watch, &c. of the City, without any direct benefit therefrom to themselves. It is estimated that about the period to which we have alluded, viz., 1830, the City was really indebted to South Boston in the sum of one hundred thousand dollars for taxes paid by her, and for which the City has made no return.

Indeed, the City did not seem inclined to consider the tax-payers of South Boston as having equal rights with real Bostonians, even in matters that were necessarily common. We may mention as one of the many proofs of this, that while the masters of the grammar schools in the City proper were receiving a salary of twelve hundred dollars, it was supposed that the people of South Boston could do with a master worth only eight hundred dollars, and their teacher was paid only that sum during many years. In the year 1828, the gentleman who kept the Hawes school, in South Boston, applied for a City school in order to receive a higher salary. Our citizens did not wish to lose him, and some of the most prominent of them sent in a petition to the School Committee, in which they said "we must regard his removal from South Boston as a loss not easily to be repaired, and we trust that the claims of this section of the City will be duly regarded in the case. We are confident that equal and even greater labor and responsibility are attached to the duties of this school, both from its relative numbers and its peculiar organization,



than the masters of the other schools individually sustain." They also ventured to say that the expenditure made by the City government "*for the benefit and convenience of the people of South Boston bears a very small proportion to the taxes assessed upon them.*" They added, "we can therefore conceive no sufficient reason *why the master of this school should not be placed upon an equal footing with the other masters as to compensation.*" They probably learned afterwards that it was because the scholars were only children of South Bostonians, while the other masters taught the children of real Bostonians. At any rate, they had to submit to the loss of their master. The injustice of the case, however, was so palpable, that the City government afterwards grudgingly raised the salary a little, but in order to keep up the distinction between Boston and South Boston schools, they fixed it at one thousand dollars. Three masters successively served for this inferior compensation. One of them, Mr. Walker, was promoted to a *bona fide* City school, and received the full salary, and still deserves and enjoys it. Mr. Harrington, the predecessor of the present grammar master, was the first who received a full salary. Now this distinction was not only unjust—it was invidious and contemptuous. There might have been a show of reason for leaving our streets in darkness, or filling our few lamps with oil of second quality, but our children had as much capacity for, and as much right to the best kind of instruction, as the children of the inhabitants of any ward of the City.

We might cite other cases of partiality and injustice towards us. But we are not inclined to dwell upon this unpleasant part of the history of our union, and pass to the period succeeding the opening of the new bridge, during which the policy of the City has been less illiberal, though still far from impartial towards South Boston.

At the beginning of that period the population of South Boston amounted to about twenty-five hundred ;

in a few years it doubled ; in 1840 it reached sixty-one hundred and seventy-six ; in 1845 it was ten thousand and twenty, having increased 62 per cent. in five years ; and at this moment it is doubtless over twelve thousand. Nor is this population such as is usually found at the outskirts of large cities. It is not the scum thrown out from the purer material. The peninsula being separated entirely from the City proper by water, and not having as yet any avenue for easy access from its centre to the busy marts of commerce, was not sought by those men alone who lived from hand to mouth, and wanted only a temporary lodging place, but also by a class of intelligent and respectable persons of narrow means, but independent spirits, who wished to dwell in their own houses, and have elbow room about them, and pure air to breathe, and a wide prospect to enjoy. There are at this time over thirteen hundred dwelling-houses in South Boston, and a very large proportion of them are owned by their occupants ; a larger proportion, probably, than can be found in any other ward of the City. With the exception of the part nearest the bridge, South Boston indeed looks like a thickly settled town in the interior of New England.

In the whole of the population there is not a single colored family, and not so many foreigners as in several other wards of the City. The foreigners who reside here, are, for the most part, of that better class who will not live in cellars, or congregate together closely in order to keep each other warm.

Many of our inhabitants have not only their homes, but their business, upon the peninsula. The amount of capital actually invested in manufacturing establishments alone, is estimated at nearly fifteen hundred thousand dollars ; which produces annually the following amount of manufactured articles :

Iron castings,	.	.	.	.	\$600,000
Machinery,	.	.	.	.	375,000
Chain Cables,	.	.	.	.	90,000
Glass ware,	.	.	.	.	100,000
Chemicals and drugs,	.	.	.	.	250,000

These employ nearly one thousand workmen. Then there is ship-building, and other important branches of industry carried on here.

The official valuation of property for taxation in South Boston was,

in 1845, on Real Estate	3,249,800	
“ “ Personal do.	557,200	
	<hr/>	Total 3,807,000
1846 “ Real Estate	4,127,100	
“ “ Personal do.	629,100	
	<hr/>	“ 4,756,200

and the valuation for the current year is estimated by competent persons at above \$5,500,000.

However, the mere material prosperity of a place is no test of its real worth ; and we would lay most stress upon what we really believe to be true, that South Boston has been sought as a residence by a very respectable class of persons, rather in spite of the policy which the City government has pursued with regard to the place, than in consequence of it.

When the City found it desirable to annex to its territory a large peninsula, which had, and always will have, the capacity for independent existence, sound policy as well as justice should have suggested that it be treated with the greatest liberality ; that it have at least as many advantages as it would otherwise have had, and that its citizens should not feel any inequality in the distribution of favors and burdens between themselves and the inhabitants of the City proper.

Such we believe has not been the case with regard to the policy of the City of Boston towards South Boston, and we think an examination of its history, whether in former or later years, will show that our belief is well founded.

[The Memorial here proceeds to point out the great disparity between the expenditure upon the streets in the City proper and in South Boston ; the neglect of the City in providing proper fire-engines and apparatus for ward twelve ; and lastly, and very fully, treats of

the impolicy of "placing all the pauper and penal institutions of the City upon this peninsula." As this latter grievance is now in a great measure removed, and as it is no object of this work to again bring up, unnecessarily, old matters of contention between either individuals or different portions of the city, a dozen pages of the Memorial are here omitted, and the concluding ones are given.]

We have dwelt upon the illiberality and unfairness of the policy of the City of Boston towards South Boston ; and we have pointed out some instances of it. We have said what we firmly believe, that if the policy of the past is to be the policy of the future, it will be better for the inhabitants of this peninsula to administer their own municipal government, since they best understand their own wishes and interests. But we have said all these things more in sorrow than in anger. We yield to none of our fellow citizens in civic patriotism ; we are proud of the name of Bostonians ; we desire ever to deserve and to bear it ; and we hope and trust that the reasonable requests that we may make may be granted. These are—

FIRST. That our streets may be graded, and their levels may be officially given at once, so that if a man builds his house, and it be afterwards undermined, or buried up by public authority, he may claim damages, as do those whose land is taken to widen streets in the City proper :

SECOND. That our principal streets be paved or macadamized, so that they may be in decent condition for travel at all seasons ; and that measures be taken to remedy the deplorable condition of the sidewalks in front of the lands of non-residents :

THIRD. That there shall be expended annually in South Boston for paving and lighting streets, for day and night police, for schools, and other things of public interest, a sum equal in proportion to the taxes paid by South Boston into the City treasury for such purposes.

FOURTH. That pure water be introduced into our

streets at the same time and in the same manner as it is to be into the City proper.

These things we think we have a right to ask as mere matters of common justice ; and there are others which we would ask for considerations of public utility, convenience, ornament and health.

We might urge even the motive of pecuniary gain, for surely if the City means to maintain jurisdiction over this peninsula, it should try to render it an eligible residence for hundreds of the valuable citizens who are every year removing their families to neighboring towns. It should strive to hasten the time when it shall be fully settled, and to have for settlers substantial tax-paying citizens. Among the measures which will promote all these objects, and which we earnestly desire to see adopted without delay, are,—

FIRST. THAT ONE OR MORE PUBLIC SQUARES BE LAID OUT, AND PROPERLY ORNAMENTED.

SECOND. THAT THE STREETS BE OPENED THROUGH THE LARGE TRACT OF LAND NOW SHUT UP BY THE CITY.

We will not waste time in urging the utility of public squares. The history of every populous City that has provided them, or neglected to do so, shows this so plainly that every school-boy knows it. Now is the time to do it in South Boston, or never. The land can be had very cheap ; perhaps it might be had for less than its present market value, because by laying out squares, the City would increase the value of the lots surrounding them. We are certain that if South Boston had an independent municipal government, one of the first things would be to provide for PUBLIC SQUARES, and to ornament them with trees.

It would be most agreeable to the inhabitants of South Boston, and we are sure that it would eventually be a subject of pride and pleasure to every citizen, to have one of the hills so well known as Dorchester Heights, made use of as ONE OF THE RESERVOIRS FOR THE WATER WHICH IS TO BE BROUGHT INTO THE CITY. The water would not rise quite so high as the top of the western hill, but

a circular reservoir might be constructed around the summit, which would stand in its centre—a beautiful islet, and which might be reached by light bridges on the four sides. This islet would furnish a most delightful walk, from which could be enjoyed an extensive prospect of almost matchless beauty—a complete panorama embracing a great variety of natural scenery. If the reservoir were encircled by a carriage drive, with foot paths on the outside, and the whole hill tastefully ornamented with trees, it would form such a combination of natural and artificial beauty as few cities in the world can boast.

It is highly desirable, also, that a square should be reserved in the eastern part of the peninsula. We would suggest that the site for a Grammar School, which will certainly be needed in a few years, should be now selected and secured while land is cheap. We would wish to see one of such dimensions as to give, what every school-house should have, but what no one in Boston possesses, a large play-ground surrounding the building. This would secure for it a free circulation of air; would protect it from the noise and bustle of the streets; and would afford to the pupils a place for exercise and recreation, while it would be an ornament and an advantage to the whole neighborhood.

We shall say little about opening the streets through the land which the City now keeps enclosed, because it is a case which speaks for itself.

Even if the Institutions are always to remain where they are, there is no necessity for the streets being stopped. There is no reason for holding sixty acres of land as a garden for paupers, when one acre of it would sell for enough to buy a whole farm in one of the neighboring towns.

The City would not allow a private individual to hold a single acre of land, and thereby interrupt even a small street, when the public good called for its being opened; and surely it should not itself hold sixty acres, and block up six large streets, without a strong and obvious necessity for so doing.

Finally, we would respectfully and earnestly ask the City authorities who possess the power of exercising such an immense influence upon the future condition of this peninsula, to consider that the time is at hand when its now open fields will be covered with houses—that the generation is born which will make it a populous town—and to take such measures for promoting the prosperity, salubrity and beauty of the place, as in their wisdom they may find most expedient.

CRANSTON HOWE,  
S. G. HOWE,  
LARRA CRANE,  
D. NICKERSON,  
H. MONTGOMERY,  
SAM'L S. PERKINS,  
C. J. F. ALLEN,  
ISAAC ADAMS,  
SETH ADAMS,  
JOSEPH SMITH.

---

J. (Page 227.)

AN ACT TO SET OFF A PART OF THE TOWN OF DORCHESTER  
AND ANNEX THE SAME TO THE CITY OF BOSTON.

*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:—*

SECT. 1. All that territory of the town of Dorchester, in the county of Norfolk, which lies north-easterly of a line extending from a stake and stones on the head-land near the line between the said town of Dorchester and the city of Roxbury in said county of Norfolk, north fifty-six degrees west across the easterly side of the Old Colony Railroad, one hundred and forty feet from the centre of a culvert next south of said line, two thousand eight hundred and twenty three (2,823) feet to a stake and stones on the head-land; thence in a straight line to the centre of the channel of Dorchester Bay, which

is the dividing line between said Dorchester and the town of Quincy, with all the inhabitants and estates therein, is hereby set off from the town of Dorchester and annexed to the city of Boston in the county of Suffolk, and shall hereafter be considered and deemed to be a part of the city of Boston: *provided*, that the said territory and the inhabitants thereon, set off as aforesaid, shall be holden to pay all such taxes as are already assessed or ordered to be assessed by said town of Dorchester, not extending beyond the first day of May eighteen hundred and fifty-six, in the same manner as if this act had not been passed; and *provided, further*, that all paupers who have gained a settlement in said town of Dorchester by a settlement gained or derived within said territory, shall be relieved or supported by said city of Boston in the same manner as if they had a legal settlement in said city of Boston.

SECT. 2. The said inhabitants hereby set off to the city of Boston shall continue to be a part of Dorchester for the purpose of electing State officers, senators and representatives to the general court, representatives to congress, and electors of president and vice-president of the United States, until the next decennial census shall be taken, or until another apportionment of representatives to the general court shall be made; and it shall be the duty of the mayor and aldermen of said city of Boston to make a true list of the persons residing on the territory hereby annexed thereto, qualified to vote at such elections, and post up the same in said territory, and correct the same as required by law, and deliver the same to the selectmen of said town of Dorchester seven days, at least, before any such election; and the same shall be taken and used by the selectmen of Dorchester for such election, in the same manner as if it had been prepared by themselves.

SECT. 3. The mayor and aldermen of the city of Boston shall be and hereby are authorized to lay out and grade such streets and lanes over the said tract, within twelve months from the passage of this act, as in their



judgment the interests of the proprietors of lands in said tract and the public convenience may require : *provided*, said proprietors shall relinquish any claim for damages or compensation for the land over which said streets and lanes are so laid out and graded, within the time aforesaid.

SECT. 4. This act shall take effect from and after its passage.

[Approved by the Governor, May 21, 1855.]

---

### NEW CENSUS OF VOTERS.

A census of the voters of Boston has been completed since the 20th chapter of this book was printed. It was taken, with that of the rest of the State, to form the basis of a new apportionment of representatives. A table is here given of the number of voters in each ward in the city, and also, for comparison, the number of the same in 1850—as prepared for the Evening Transcript. Ward Two now consists of East Boston, and Ward Twelve of South Boston (which embraces Washington Village). It will be seen that the latter ward has more voters than any other in the city.

	1850.	1857.	Incr.
Ward 1	1511	1709	198
“ 2	1380	1916	536
“ 3	1487	1755	268
“ 4	1552	1961	409
“ 5	1502	1907	405
“ 6	1506	2392	886
“ 7	1470	1573	103
“ 8	1546	1828	282
“ 9	1427	1445	18
“ 10	1458	1766	308
“ 11	1465	2020	555
“ 12	1482	2187	705
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
	17,786	22,459	4673
Washington Vill.	219		
	<hr/>		
	22,678		

THE publication of the "History" having been delayed on account of one of the Portraits being unfinished, an opportunity is afforded of noting several recent events of public interest.

A religious society has been organized at Washington Village, South Boston, and a chapel built. The latter was dedicated in June, 1857. Rev. Edward Squire, formerly of the Broadway Unitarian Church, is the minister.

Rev. J. A. Goodhue, late pastor of South Baptist Church (see p. 172), resigned in June, 1857.

Rev. C. S. Porter, late pastor of Phillips Church (see p. 167), was dismissed July 8th, 1857.

Rev. J. L. Blake, D.D. (see p. 160) died at Orange, in the State of New Jersey, early in July, 1857, aged 69.

---

The name of the firm E. & H. O. Briggs, ship-builders, is printed on page 213 with the accidental omission of one of the initials.

## GENERAL INDEX.

---

ADAMS, Isaac, Printing Press Manufactory . . . . .	206
Aldermen, from South Boston . . . . .	234
Alger, Cyrus, Iron Works . . . . .	205, 254
biographical sketch of . . . . .	251
funeral of . . . . .	259
Alger & Reed's Forge . . . . .	212
Alvord, Rev. J. W., Minister of Phillips Church . . . . .	167
Annals of Dorchester . . . . .	44
Annexation of Dorchester Neck to Boston . . . . .	72, 277, 279, 282
of Washington Village to Boston . . . . .	227, 313
Banks in South Boston . . . . .	216
Baptist Church (South), first place of meeting . . . . .	168
new meeting-house . . . . .	169
City Point Chapel . . . . .	182, 203
Barrett, Samuel, Master in the Hawes School . . . . .	133
Battles, Jonathan, Writing Master of Mather School . . . . .	135
Bay State Iron Company's Works . . . . .	211
Bay View . . . . .	227
Bear, killed at Dorchester Neck . . . . .	287
Bent, Adam, biographical sketch of . . . . .	261
Bigelow School, formation of the . . . . .	133
building and dedication of the school-house . . . . .	145
view of the building . . . . .	148
Bird, John H., obituary notice of . . . . .	273
Bird, Jonathan, house of . . . . .	32
Births in South Boston . . . . .	232
Blake, Elder James, builds a house on Dorchester Neck . . . . .	31, 40, 264
his death . . . . .	41

Blake, Deacon James, death of . . . . .	41
burning of the house of Deacon James, a descendant . . . . .	66
Blake, James, the Annalist . . . . .	42
his death . . . . .	45
Blake, Rev. J. L., Rector of St. Matthew's Church . . . . .	160, 316
Blake, Samuel, biographical notice of . . . . .	263
Blind Asylum, at South Boston . . . . .	187
Boston, town meeting respecting annexation of Dorchester Neck . . . . .	73
memorial to Selectmen of . . . . .	279
Boston Wharf Co., Bridge built by . . . . .	104
Bosworth, Rev. Geo. W., Minister of South Baptist Church . . . . .	172
Branch School organized . . . . .	134
Brewery, Phipps & Co.'s . . . . .	216
Bridge, between Boston and South Boston, first movement for . . . . .	81, 303
discussion respecting its location . . . . .	83
building of South Bridge authorized, and completion . . . . .	77, 84, 288
efforts for a second Bridge, from Wheeler's Point . . . . .	84, 89, 304
disorderly proceedings respecting it . . . . .	86, 89
Bill for a Free Bridge passed . . . . .	94, 292
North Free Bridge completed . . . . .	96
South Bridge purchased by the City . . . . .	101
Old Colony Railroad Bridge . . . . .	102
Evans's Railroad Bridge . . . . .	102
Boston & New York Central Railroad Bridges . . . . .	103
Mount Washington Avenue . . . . .	104
Bridgman, Laura, some account of . . . . .	190, 297
Briggs, E. & H. O., ship building . . . . .	213, 316
Brinley Block, erection of . . . . .	78
British Army, in Boston . . . . .	45
evacuates Boston . . . . .	57, 149
Broadway, laying out of . . . . .	196
changes in its level . . . . .	202
Broadway Bank . . . . .	217
Broadway Railroad Company . . . . .	226
Brooks, Noah, sketch of his life . . . . .	264
view of his dwelling-house . . . . .	265
Burrill, Mrs., School for Young Ladies . . . . .	153
view of the building . . . . .	153

Cains, Thomas, glass manufactory . . . . .	204, 215
Cannon, manufacture of . . . . .	255
Capen, Rev. Lemuel, appointed School Master . . . . .	116
Minister of Hawes Place Church . . . . .	157
residence of . . . . .	227
resignation of offices . . . . .	119, 158
Causeway in Dorchester . . . . .	25, 27, 194
Church and School, distant from the first settlers . . . . .	68
Churches in South Boston . . . . .	154
Broadway Unitarian . . . . .	177
City Point Chapel . . . . .	182, 203
Free-will Baptist . . . . .	180
Hawes Place Congregational . . . . .	155, 158
Methodist Episcopal (Centenary Chapel) . . . . .	172
Payson . . . . .	179
Phillips . . . . .	163, 316
South Baptist . . . . .	167, 316
St. Augustine's . . . . .	161
St. Matthew's . . . . .	158
St. Peter and St. Paul's . . . . .	178
Universalist . . . . .	176
City Council, members of, from South Boston . . . . .	235
City Institutions . . . . .	223
City Lands in South Boston . . . . .	203, 223, 312
Clinch, Rev. J. H., Rector of St. Matthew's Church . . . . .	160
Coney's Foundry . . . . .	209
Conolly, Rev. H. L., Rector of St. Matthew's Church . . . . .	160
Cook, Rev. T. D., Minister of Universalist Church . . . . .	177
Crafts, Frederick, Teacher of Hawes and Bigelow Schools . . . . .	133, 147
Cressey, Rev. T. R., Minister of South Baptist Church . . . . .	170
Damon, Rev. Calvin, Minister of Universalist Church . . . . .	177
Dawes, Rev. Thomas, Minister of Hawes Place Church . . . . .	158
Dean, Rev. W. W., Minister of Universalist Church . . . . .	177
Deaths in South Boston . . . . .	232
Distinguished Citizens, biographical sketches of—Cyrus Alger . . . . .	251
Adam Bent . . . . .	261
John H. Bird . . . . .	273

Distinguished Citizens, biographical sketches of—Samuel Blake	263
Noah Brooks . . . . .	264
Josiah Dunham . . . . .	271
Romanus Emerson . . . . .	275
Abraham Gould . . . . .	250
John Hawes . . . . .	238
Hall J. How . . . . .	269
David Williams . . . . .	266
Joseph Woodward . . . . .	244
Dorchester, settlement of . . . . .	9, 13
names of the First Settlers, and distress of	13, 14, 19, 27, 29
opposition to Annexation of Neck to Boston . . . . .	74, 277
Dorchester Avenue Horse Railroad . . . . .	225
Dorchester Heights, fortification of the . . . . .	49
Dorchester Neck, how regarded by the first Settlers	12, 13, 24
division of lands . . . . .	18
lots to be fenced in . . . . .	28
its annexation to Boston . . . . .	72, 77, 277, 279, 282
exposed condition of inhabitants during the Siege of Boston	65
Drake, Albert, Teacher of Music in the Schools . . . . .	133
Driver, Rev. Thomas, Minister of South Baptist Church . . . . .	171
Drowning of three men at Dorchester Neck . . . . .	71
Duck, wild, nest of at Dorchester Neck . . . . .	288
Duel, fought at the Neck . . . . .	70
Dunbar, Rev. Duncan, Minister of South Baptist Church . . . . .	171
Dunham, Josiah, sketch of the Life of . . . . .	271
Dwelling House, first one built on Dorchester Neck	31, 40, 264
Noah Brooks's, on Broadway . . . . .	265
other houses in 1776 . . . . .	32, 33
number of houses in South Boston . . . . .	230
Elegy on the Death of John Foster . . . . .	34, 38
Elm Trees, near Dorchester Meeting-house . . . . .	37
on Fourth Street . . . . .	33, 285
Emerson, Romanus, notice of . . . . .	275
England, Dorchester first Settlers depart from . . . . .	9
Execution, public, on Nook Hill . . . . .	109

Fairchild, Rev. J. H., Minister of Phillips Church . . . . .	166
Minister of Payson Church . . . . .	179
Families in South Boston . . . . .	230
Field, Barnum, appointed School Teacher . . . . .	119
Fire-Alarm Telegraph . . . . .	237
Fire Companies in South Boston . . . . .	217
Fitzsimmons, Rev. Terrence, St. Augustine's Church . . . . .	162
Foster, Capt. Hopestill, death of . . . . .	39
his descendants . . . . .	40, 286
Foster-house and Land . . . . .	31, 284
Foster, James, burning of his house . . . . .	40
ancient deed of land of . . . . .	286
Foster, John, his Death and Epitaph . . . . .	33
elegy on . . . . .	34, 38
Foster, Mrs., house burned by the British Soldiers . . . . .	67
Free-will Baptist Church . . . . .	180
names of different Ministers . . . . .	181
Fulton Iron Foundry . . . . .	207
Gas Company, in South Boston . . . . .	219
Glass Works, first erected in South Boston . . . . .	204
Cains's . . . . .	215
Mt. Washington . . . . .	215
Slane's . . . . .	214
Globe Locomotive Works . . . . .	209
Goodhue, Rev. J. A., Minister of South Baptist Church . . . . .	172, 316
Gould, Abraham, brick house built by . . . . .	79, 285
extensive tracts of land . . . . .	251, 284
real estate of . . . . .	78, 80
obituary . . . . .	250
Hale, Joseph, Master of Bigelow School . . . . .	147
Harrington, Joseph, Jr., chosen Teacher of Hawes School . . . . .	124
Harris, John A., Writing Master in the Hawes School . . . . .	133
Hawes Free Evening School . . . . .	219
Hawes, John, appropriates land for a Church . . . . .	154, 295
death of . . . . .	157
biographical sketch of . . . . .	238

Hawes, John, extracts from the Will of . . . . .	295
Hawes Juvenile Association, formation of . . . . .	125
names of original members, and exhibitions . . . . .	130
Hawes Place Congregational Society . . . . .	155, 158
Hawes, Rev. Prince, Minister of Phillips Church . . . . .	166
Hawes School-house, built and opened for use . . . . .	119
struck by lightning . . . . .	131
division of school . . . . .	133, 134
Heights of Dorchester, Washington's preparations for fortifying . . . . .	46
forts erected in one night . . . . .	49
fortification of, in the War of 1812 . . . . .	105
one of them used as a Park and Reservoir . . . . .	200, 203
Hotel, South Boston, built . . . . .	79
Golden Ball . . . . .	80
Twelfth Ward . . . . .	79
Mount Washington . . . . .	188
kept by Mr. Healy, on the Foster place . . . . .	285
How, Hall J., biographical sketch of . . . . .	269
Howe, Rev. M. A. DeW., Teacher of Hawes School . . . . .	120
Idiots, School for, at South Boston . . . . .	193
Indians, at Mattapanneck . . . . .	228, 302
Iron Works, Alger's . . . . .	205, 254
Alger & Reed's . . . . .	212
Bay State Company's . . . . .	211
Coney's . . . . .	209
Loring's . . . . .	210
Lyman & Souther's . . . . .	209
Thacher's . . . . .	207
Wilmarth's . . . . .	205
Jackson, Rev. William, preacher at South Boston . . . . .	171, 180
Land, price of, on Dorchester Neck, and in South Boston . . . . .	28, 231
extensive tracts owned by individuals . . . . .	251, 284
Lawrence, Amos, first interested in the South Boston Schools . . . . .	127
letter to members of the Lawrence Association . . . . .	138
death and funeral of his son . . . . .	139



Lawrence, Amos, presents to the Lawrence Association . . . . .	143
death and funeral of . . . . .	143
Lawrence, Amos A., prizes for essays . . . . .	145
Lawrence Association formed . . . . .	137
Lawrence enclosure, at Mt. Auburn, view of the . . . . .	140
Lawrence School . . . . .	136, 148
view of the School-house . . . . .	148
Lincoln, Jairus, appointed School Teacher . . . . .	119
Lippitt, Rev. G. W., Minister of Hawes Place Society . . . . .	158
Little Neck, name changed to Washington Village . . . . .	226
Loring, Harrison, Engine Manufactory . . . . .	210
Lyceum Hall . . . . .	223
Lyman & Souther, Globe Locomotive Works . . . . .	209
Lynch, Rev. T. and M., Ministers of St. Augustine's Church . . . . .	162
Lyndon, Rev. P. F., Minister of St. Peter & St. Paul's Church . . . . .	178
 Mahoney, Rev. John, of St. Augustine's Church . . . . .	 162
Manufactories . . . . .	204, 308
Market Place, lot set apart for a . . . . .	204
Masonic Lodges in South Boston . . . . .	223
Massachusetts School for Idiots . . . . .	193
Mather, Rev. Richard, arrival of, at Dorchester . . . . .	17
Mather School organized, and School-house built . . . . .	134, 135
name changed to Lawrence School . . . . .	136
Mattapan, settled and called Dorchester . . . . .	9, 12
Mattapan Literary Association, organization of . . . . .	182
names of original members . . . . .	183
list of Presidents . . . . .	186
Mattapannock, as a Pasture for Dorchester cattle . . . . .	12, 13, 24, 25, 26
called Dorchester Neck . . . . .	12
division of . . . . .	18
Mechanics Bank . . . . .	216
Memorial, from citizens of South Boston . . . . .	300
Methodist Episcopal Church . . . . .	172
building of Centenary Chapel . . . . .	175
names of Ministers . . . . .	176
Military Company . . . . .	217
Mount Washington Female Institute . . . . .	153

Municipal Organization . . . . .	233
Music, first taught in Hawes School . . . . .	132
Neale, Rev. R. H., Minister of South Baptist Church . . . . .	170
Newspapers in South Boston . . . . .	217
Nook Lane, situation of . . . . .	286
Nook's Hill, fortification of . . . . .	54, 56
removal of . . . . .	203
Odd Fellows' Lodge . . . . .	223
Omnibuses in South Boston . . . . .	224, 227
Page, William P., chosen Teacher of Hawes School . . . . .	120
Pasture, Dorchester Neck used for a . . . . .	13, 18, 24, 25
land for, retained by the Town of Dorchester . . . . .	68
Patton, Rev. W. W., Minister of Phillips Church . . . . .	167
Payson Church, organization of . . . . .	179
Perkins Institution for the Blind . . . . .	187
Phillips Church Society, organization of and place of worship . . . . .	163
Pierce, Rev. T. C., first Minister in South Boston . . . . .	154, 172
Police Department . . . . .	237
Population of Dorchester Neck and South Boston . . . . .	229, 307
Porter, Rev. Charles S., Minister of Phillips Church . . . . .	167, 316
Powow Point . . . . .	228
Primary Schools . . . . .	150
Proprietors of Dorchester Neck, meeting of . . . . .	29
Pulaski Guards, the . . . . .	217
Railroad, Old Colony, station at South Boston . . . . .	102
Boston and New York Central, bridges . . . . .	103
Broadway, Horse . . . . .	226
Dorchester Avenue, Horse . . . . .	225
Real Estate, rise in value of . . . . .	231, 232
Reservoir, for the Cochituate water . . . . .	218, 311
Roxbury Canal, digging of the . . . . .	70
Schools, public, and School-houses . . . . .	111, 306
private School at South Boston . . . . .	111

Schools—petition for a public School . . . . .	112
first public one established . . . . .	113
description of the first Schools and School-houses . . . . .	114, 118
Bigelow . . . . .	133, 145, 148
Hawes . . . . .	119, 131, 133, 134
Hawes Free Evening . . . . .	219
Lawrence . . . . .	136, 148
Mather . . . . .	134, 135, 136
Mt. Washington Female Institute . . . . .	153
Primary Schools . . . . .	150
Samaritan Society . . . . .	221
Sewers, public, in the streets . . . . .	200
Shackford, Rev. C. S., Minister of Hawes Place Society . . . . .	158
Shade Tree Society . . . . .	220
Shepard, Isaac F., Teacher in the Mather School . . . . .	135
Ship, first launched in Dorchester . . . . .	25
Ship-building in South Boston . . . . .	212, 265
Slane, P. F., Flint Glass Works . . . . .	214
Small-pox, in Boston and vicinity . . . . .	69
hospital at Dorchester Neck . . . . .	69
South Boston, the name Dorchester Neck changed to . . . . .	77
Southard, D. A., death and funeral of . . . . .	142
Spinney, Samuel R., residence of . . . . .	227
Square, public, proposed laying out of . . . . .	204, 311
Squire, Rev. Edward, Broadway Unitarian Church . . . . .	178, 316
Stearns, Josiah A., Grammar Master of Mather School . . . . .	135
Principal of Lawrence School . . . . .	150
Streets of South Boston . . . . .	194, 305, 310, 314
laid out by the Selectmen of Boston . . . . .	195
new survey ordered . . . . .	199
paving of the principal ones, and alteration in the grades . . . . .	201, 202
St. Augustine's Church, building of . . . . .	161
St. Matthew's Church, incorporation of and place of worship . . . . .	158
St. Peter and St. Paul, Church of . . . . .	178
Taxes in South Boston . . . . .	78, 232, 306
Tea, from British ships, gathered on the shore at the Neck . . . . .	66, 285
Thacher, George C. and Thomas, Iron Foundry . . . . .	207

Thomas, Rev. Moses G., Minister Broadway Unitarian Church	177
Tillson, John, Dedicatory Hymn by . . . . .	146
Trees, two ancient ones on Fourth Street . . . . .	33, 285
at the Neck . . . . .	68, 287
Shade Tree Society . . . . .	220
Tudor, William, and others, petition for annexation . . . . .	72
Turnpike, Dorchester and Milton . . . . .	88
Union Iron Works . . . . .	205
Unitarian (Broadway) Society, organization of . . . . .	177
Universalist Church, place of worship, and Minister . . . . .	176
Valuation of Real Estate in 1804 . . . . .	78
forty years later . . . . .	232, 309
Vital Statistics . . . . .	232
Voters, number of, in South Boston, and whole city . . . . .	230, 315
Walker, Moses W., Teacher of Hawes School . . . . .	120
his account of a disturbance in the School . . . . .	121
War of 1812, troops stationed in South Boston . . . . .	106
Ward Twelve, limits of . . . . .	233
Warren Association line of Omnibuses . . . . .	224
Washington, General, his military operations near Boston . . . . .	46
address to, by Selectmen of Boston, and his reply . . . . .	59, 60
vote of thanks to, by Congress, and his answer . . . . .	61, 62
medal presented to him by Congress . . . . .	63
Washington Village . . . . .	226, 316
annexed to South Boston . . . . .	227, 313
Water, supply of to the citizens . . . . .	218, 311
Whittemore, Rev. Benj., first Minister of Universalist Church	176
Williams, David, biographical notice of . . . . .	266
Wire Works, Washburn's . . . . .	212
Wiswall, Oliver, house of . . . . .	32
Wolcott, Governor, Poem by . . . . .	10
Wood, Zephaniah, Minister and School Teacher . . . . .	116, 154, 174
his death . . . . .	156
Woodward, Joseph, efforts in favor of annexation and a bridge	72, 89
biographical sketch of . . . . .	244

# INDEX TO NAMES.

- 
- |                        |                              |                         |                      |                        |                                      |
|------------------------|------------------------------|-------------------------|----------------------|------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| ADAMS, George          | 231                          | Baxter, Edward W.       | 75, 279              | Blanchard, Albert H.   | 130                                  |
| Adams, Isaac,          | 206, 220, 313                | Bean, Jedediah P.       | 236                  | Blanchard, J. W., Jr.  | 183, 184                             |
| Adams, John            | 61, 249                      | Bedlington, Sam'l M.    | 130                  | Blood, Samuel D.       | 224                                  |
| Adams, Samuel          | 288                          | Bellingham, Mr.         | 19                   | Bosworth, Rev. Geo. W. | 172, 182                             |
| Adams, Seth,           | 206, 217, 236, 313           | Benham, John            | 19                   | Boutwell, Geo. S.      | 149                                  |
| Adams, Mrs. John       | 54                           | Bent, Adam,             | 113, 234, 235, 261   | Bowles, Stephen B.     | 184                                  |
| Alexander, Henry W.    | 131                          | Bent, Ebenezer          | 261                  | Boyle, Rev. Isaac      | 160                                  |
| Alger, Cyrus,          | 205, 207, 208, 234, 235, 251 | Bent, William           | 261                  | Boylston, Dr. Zabdiel  | 69                                   |
| Alger, Cyrus, Jr.      | 212                          | Bickford, Mr.           | 237                  | Brabiner, William A.   | 184                                  |
| Alger, Francis,        | 212, 219, 251                | Bigelow, John P.        | 145, 147, 218        | Brackett, Rev. Josiah  | 175                                  |
| Allen, C. J. F.        | 220, 313                     | Billings, William G.    | 207                  | Brainard, Edw. H.      | 216, 236                             |
| Allen, C. J. F., Jr.   | 139, 149                     | Binney, Joseph S.       | 130                  | Bridgman, Laura        | 190, 297                             |
| Allen, W. W.           | 285                          | Bird, Abiel             | 29                   | Briggs, E. & H. O.     | 213, 316                             |
| Alvord, Rev. John W.   | 167                          | Bird, Benjamin,         | 29, 30, 238          | Briggs, Mrs.           | 19                                   |
| Amee, Col. J. L. C.    | 217, 235                     | Bird, Elijah            | 78                   | Brooks, Gov. John      | 155                                  |
| Anderson, Joseph R.    | 209                          | Bird, Ezekiel           | 78                   | Brooks, Lydia S.       | 134                                  |
| Andrew, John           | 4                            | Bird, Jacob             | 78                   | Brooks, Noah           | 119, 212, 213, 235, 264              |
| Andrews, Thomas        | 19                           | Bird, John H.           | 273                  | Brown, Asa             | 235                                  |
| Andrews, Wm. T.        | 219                          | Bird, Jonathan          | 69                   | Brown, Edward          | 286                                  |
| Apollonio, N. A.       | 232                          | Bird, Jonathan, 3d      | 78                   | Brown, Elizabeth,      | 136, 286                             |
| Apthorp, John T.       | 98                           | Bird, Samuel            | 78                   | Brown, Dea.            | 248                                  |
| Atherton, Maj. Gen. H. | 19, 29, 287                  | Bird, Thomas            | 29                   | Bruce, Lyman G.        | 130                                  |
| Avery, John            | 292                          | Bird, Thomas,           | 78, 239, 282         | Bryant, G. J. F.       | 173                                  |
| Badlam, Steph.         | 74, 197, 279                 | Bird, Mr.               | 32                   | Bull, Rev. W.          | 160                                  |
| Bailey, D. W.          | 236                          | Blackman, John          | 27, 29               | Bullock, Edward        | 19                                   |
| Baker, Judah, Jr.      | 183                          | Blake, Agnes            | 40                   | Burrill, John          | 130                                  |
| Baker, Lewis F.        | 130                          | Blake, George P.        | 220                  | Burrill, Mrs. Maria    | 153                                  |
| Baker, Richard         | 27                           | Blake, John             | 27, 264              | Butler, Nicholas       | 19                                   |
| Baker, widow           | 27                           | Blake, John H.          | 219                  | Cains, Thomas          | 204, 205, 215                        |
| Baldwin, Loammi        | 97                           | Blake, Elder James,     | 27, 31, 40, 41, 264  | Capen, B.              | 130                                  |
| Baldwin, Rev. Dr.      | 173                          | Blake, Dea. Jas.        | 29, 30, 41           | Capen, Bernard         | 19                                   |
| Ball, Rev. Harvey      | 169                          | Blake, James, the Anna- | list, 42, 43, 44, 45 | Capen, Hopestill       | 29                                   |
| Ball, Rufus            | 165                          | Blake, James            | 33, 66, 67, 78       | Capen, John            | 19, 288                              |
| Barker, W. R.          | 184                          | Blake, Rev. J. L.       | 160, 316             | Capen, John, Jr.       | 27                                   |
| Barrett, Samuel        | 133                          | Blake, Mrs. Ruth        | 45                   | Capen, Joseph          | 39                                   |
| Batchelder, Miss Ruth  | 41                           | Blake, Samuel           | 31, 263              | Capen, Rev. Lemuel,    | 4, 116, 119, 157, 158, 227, 228, 238 |
| Bates, James           | 19                           | Blake, Sukey Foster     | 261                  | Capen, Preserved       | 27, 29, 288                          |
| Batten, widow          | 27                           | Blake, William,         | 19, 40, 264          | Capen, Samuel          | 29                                   |
| Battles, Jonathan,     | 134, 135, 136                | Blake, widow            | 29                   |                        |                                      |
|                        |                              | Blake, Mrs.             | 71                   |                        |                                      |

- Capen, Samuel, Jr. 29  
 Capen, Dea. 27  
 Champney, John 78, 282  
 Chauncy, Rev. Dr. 245,  
 246, 250  
 Cheverus, Rt. Rev.  
   Bishop 161  
 Chittendon, Samuel 96  
 Christian, Abby 45  
 Clap, Ebenezer 29  
 Clap, Ebenezer, Jr. 282  
 Clap, Edward 19  
 Clap, Elisha 239  
 Clap, Ezra 27  
 Clap, Jason 78  
 Clap, Jonathan 29  
 Clap, Lemuel 78  
 Clap, Mary 78  
 Clap, Nathaniel 27  
 Clap, Nicholas 19, 27  
 Clap, Noah 43  
 Clap, Roger 12, 14, 15,  
   19, 27  
 Clap, Samuel 27, 29, 30  
 Clap, Mrs. Sarah 239  
 Clap, William 29  
 Clap, widow 27  
 Clapp, F. H. 130  
 Clapp, Deacon John 288  
 Clapp, Capt. William 227  
 Clark, Rev. Rufus W. 149  
 Clarke, William 27  
 Clement, Augustin 19, 27  
 Clinch, Rev. Joseph H. 160  
 Cobb, David 292  
 Cobb, Samuel 78  
 Cobb, Sewall C. 186  
 Codman, Rev. John 173  
 Colburn, Willis H. 130, 183  
 Cole, Benjamin E. 184  
 Cole, Miss 152  
 Collicot, Richard 19  
 Collier, Rev. Mr. 109, 110  
 Collyer, Rev. J. I. P. 176  
 Coney, Jabez 208, 209,  
   236  
 Conley, C. C. 236  
 Conolly, Rev. H. L. 160  
 Converse, J. W. 217  
 Cook, Rev. Edward 176  
 Cook, Rev. Theo. D. 177  
 Corlew, B. E. 184  
 Cotting, Mr. 159  
 Cowdin, Jephtha R. 237  
 Crafts, Frederick 133, 147  
 Crafts, John W. 236  
 Crane, Horatio N. 235  
 Crane, J. H. 183  
 Crane, Larra 234, 313  
 Crane, Lemuel 75, 279  
 Crane, Samuel D. 236  
 Crehore, Benjamin 261  
 Cressey, Rev. T. R. 170  
 Crooker, Ralph 211  
 Crosby, Elkanah C. 130  
 Crosby, Sumner 236  
 Crowley, Mr. 237  
 Curtis, Daniel B. 183, 184,  
   186  
 Dahlgreen, Com. J. A. 260  
 Dall, Mr. 151  
 Dalton, John 109, 110  
 Dame, A. A. 96  
 Damon, Rev. Calvin 177  
 Darracott, Franklin 219  
 Dartmouth, Lord 51  
 Davenport, Edward J. 219  
 Dawes, Rev. Thomas 158  
 Day, M. E. 130  
 Dean, Rev. W. W. 177  
 Deeble, Robert 19  
 Degen, Rev. H. V. 176  
 Deluce, John 78, 112, 113  
 Deluce, Mr. 32, 173  
 Demerest, Samuel C. 236  
 Dexter, Charles W. 130, 184  
 Dexter, Geo. S. 183, 184,  
   186, 236  
 Dewire, Hannah 165  
 Dickerman, Thomas 19  
 Dimmock, Thomas 19  
 Dix & Brinley 204  
 Dodge, Ephraim 224  
 Dodge, William B. 207  
 Dorr, William B. 235  
 Drake, Albert 133  
 Drake, Henry A. 183, 184,  
   186  
 Drake, Jeremy 219, 235  
 Driver, Rev. Thos. 169, 171  
 Dunbar, Rev. Duncan 171  
 Duncan, Nathaniel 19  
 Dunham, Josiah 234, 235,  
   271  
 Dunham, Josiah, Jr. 220,  
   234, 235  
 Dunham, Rev. Z. B. C. 176  
 Duvivier, M. 63  
 Dwight, Rev. S. E. 165  
 Dyer, George 19, 27  
 Eaton, William 236  
 Edson, Rev. Theodore 160  
 Belles, John 19  
 Elliot, John 29  
 Emerson, Rev. Brown 275  
 Emerson, Rev. Noah 275  
 Emerson, Rev. Reuben 275  
 Emerson, Romanus 235,  
   275  
 Eustis, Gov. 268  
 Evans, William 102  
 Everett, Ebenezer, 295, 296  
 Everett, Moses 74, 78  
 Everett, Mr. 118  
 Everson, G. H. 207  
 Fairchild, Rev. Joy H. 166,  
   179  
 Fairchild, Wm. B. 130, 136  
 Farnsworth, Joseph, 19, 27  
 Farrington, John, 2d 78  
 Farrington, Mr. 32  
 Faxon, Richard 130  
 Fenn, Benjamin 19  
 Fenno, Abigail 165  
 Fenwick, Bishop 162  
 Field, Barnum 119  
 Fisk, S. C. & G. 235  
 Fiske, William 296  
 Fitzsimmons, Rev. T. 162  
 Fletcher, Henry W. 235  
 Flood, Joseph 19  
 Floyd, Lucy 134  
 Foster, Benjamin 251  
 Foster, Elizabeth 287  
 Foster, Hopestill 27, 33,  
   39, 250, 286  
 Foster, James, 39, 40, 250,  
   286, 287  
 Foster, John, 33, 34, 36, 38,  
   39  
 Foster, Mary 250  
 Foster, Samuel 286  
 Foster, Standfast 37, 238  
 Foster, Susannah 250  
 Foster, Mrs. 19, 31, 39,  
   65, 66, 67  
 Foster, Lieut. 29, 30  
 Fox, Rev. Thos. B. 149  
 Frothingham, Rich'd, Jr. 149  
 Fuller, S. P. 198, 199  
 Fuller, Sumner 166  
 Gannett, Rev. E. S., D.D. 178, 259  
 Gardner, Henry 295, 296,  
   297  
 Garland, Rev. G. D. 181  
 Gibson, Christopher 19  
 Gilbert, John 19  
 Gill, Caleb 220  
 Gipson, Jonas C. 225  
 Glover, John 19, 29  
 Glover, Theodore R. 130  
 Glover, W. W. W. 130  
 Glover, Mr. 26  
 Goddard, Mr. 49  
 Goodenow, Elisha 222  
 Goodhue, Rev. J. A. 172, 316  
 Goodhue, Stephen W. 183,  
   184  
 Goodridge, Rebecca A. 131  
 Goodridge, Samuel 216

Gordon	56	Holmes, Ebenezer	29	Kinnersley, Thos.	24
Gore, Jeremiah	78	Holmes, Mr.	79	Kinsley, John	24
Gorham, Hon. Mr.	91	Homans, John	48	Knight, John	24
Gould, Abraham, 78, 79, 80, 112, 159, 247, 250, 284, 286		Homer, Geo. J.	164	Lake, Thomas	27
Gray, John	78	Homes, Henry	164	Lambert, Thomas	24
Gray, Rev. Dr.	157	Hopkins, Stephen	61	Lane, William	24
Greele, Samuel	149	How, Calvin F.	130	Lawrence, Abbott	265
Greene, Gardiner 72, 98, 197, 247, 278, 281, 288		How, Hall J.	269	Lawrence, Amos, 137, 139, 143, 145, 149	
Greenleaf, Hon. Thos.	246	How, Dr. James	269	Lawrence, Amos A.	145
Greenway, John	19	Howard, Charlotte	166	Lawrence, R. M. 139, 141	
Gridley	50	Howard, Wm. H. 235, 254		Lee, George	189
Griswold, Rt. Rev. A. V. 159, 160		Howard, Mr.	27	Leeds, Samuel, 220, 221, 235	
Hale, Joseph	147	Howe, Cranston	313	Leeds, Thomas	78
Hall, Daniel	236	Howe, John	75, 76	Leonard, Rev. Mr.	58
Hall, Samuel	58	Howe, Rev. M. A. De W. 120, 160		Lincoln, Ensign	168
Hammond, Horace	225	Howe, Samuel G. 187, 190, 193, 297, 313		Lincoln, Jairus 119, 120	
Hammond, Thos. 156, 165		Howe, Gen. 46, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 57, 64, 194, 202		Lincoln & Wheelwright	264
Hancock, John 62, 63		Howes, Willis	235	Lippitt, Rev. G. W.	158
Harding, William B.	235	Hubbard, Samuel	97	Littlefield, Rev. W. H. 181	
Harlow, Ezra	236	Hull, John	19	Loring, Charles H. 183, 184	
Harrington, Joseph, Jr. 124, 125, 129, 130, 132		Humphreys, Jonas	19	Loring, Harrison 210, 211	
Harrington, Leonard 121, 123		Humphries, James, 78, 295, 296, 297		Loring, Israel	78
Harrington, Rufus	78	Hunnewell, Jonathan	198	Loring, Sarah A.	136
Harrington, Mr.	32, 33	Hunting, Mr.	80	Lowell, John	70
Harris, John Alex. 130, 133		Huntington, Rev. Prof.	259	Lucas, Benjamin	165
Harris, Joseph, Jr.	235	Hutchinson, Mr.	19	Ludlow, Mr.	13
Harris, Rev. Thad. M. 72, 154, 155, 156, 157		Jackson, Eben 234, 235		Lyman & Souther	209
Hartshorn, Oliver	78	Jackson, Rev. William, 171, 180, 181		Lynch, Rev. T. & M.	162
Hatch, Thomas	19	James, Benjamin 234, 236		Lyndon, Rev. P. F.	179
Hathorne, William	19	Jarves & Cornerais	215	Madison, James	104
Hawes, John, 154, 156, 157, 158, 238, 273, 295		Jay, John	61, 249	Magee, James	268
Hawes, Obadiah	27	Jenkins, Joshua 217, 220, 227, 236		Maguire, Francis	285
Hawes, Rev. Prince	164, 166	Jenkins, Rowland E.	130	Mahoney, Rev. John	162
Hawes, Richard	19	Jenkins, Solon	235	Makepeace, Thomas	24
Hawkins, Mr.	19	Jenkins, Wm. E.	130	Malcom, Rev. Howard	169, 170
Hayden, John	19	Jenks, Samuel H. Jr.	184	Mann, Nehemiah P. 235	
Haynes, Edw. W.	130	Jenney, Francis H. 136, 183		Mann, Nehemiah P. Jr. 130, 184	
Hayward, Ebenezer	235	Jenney, N. S.	139	Mannings, widow	27
Healy, Mr.	285	Johnson, Joseph	165	Marshall, Moses	78
Hedge, Frank	4	Johnson, Joseph B.	130	Marshall, Mr.	32
Herrick, Jacob 165, 237		Johnson, Mr.	132	Martin, Mr.	24
Hewins, Abel 113, 166		Johnston, William	215	Mason, Henry	236
Hewins, Anna	165	Jones, Ebenezer	31	Mason, Jonathan 72, 247, 248, 254, 288	
Higginson, Stephen	78	Jones, Edward	219	Mason, Lowell 132, 188	
Hildreth, J. W.	183	Jones, Isaac 27, 236		Mather, Rev. Richard 17, 18, 24, 25, 135	
Hill, John	19	Jones, Richard	24	Mather, Timothy	27
Hill, Samuel	220	Jones, Thomas, 24, 234, 236		Maverick, Rev. John, 9, 13, 18	
Hill, Mrs. Samuel	221	Jones, T. K.	246	McCarthy, William	130
Hoar, Thomas	130	Jones, Mr.	27	McDonald, Mrs.	193
Holden, Phineas	69	Josselyn, F. M., Jr.	236	McNeil, Capt.	106
Hollis, Phoebe	166	Joy, Mr.	245	Mead, Charles	176
Holman, John	19	Kendall, Mr.	91	Merrill, Rev. J. W.	176
		Kent, Samuel 264, 265		Miller, Alexander	24

- |                        |               |                       |           |                        |              |
|------------------------|---------------|-----------------------|-----------|------------------------|--------------|
| Miller, John           | 24            | Pierce, Robert        | 24        | Seward, Richard        | 130          |
| Miller, Dr.            | 269           | Pierce, Rev. Thomas   | 154,      | Shackford, Rev. C. C.  | 158          |
| Miller, Mr.            | 71            | 163, 172, 173,        | 174       | Shattuck, Lemuel       | 230          |
| Millet, Thomas         | 24            | Pierpont, Rev. John   | 119,      | Sherman, Rev. David    | 176          |
| Minot, George          | 24            |                       | 157       | Sherman, Edwin A.      | 130          |
| Monks, John P.         | 183, 220      | Pike, James           | 71        | Shepard, Isaac F.      | 135          |
| Monks, William J.      | 184           | Pitcher, Andrew       | 24        | Shores, A.             | 39           |
| Montgomery, H.         | 313           | Pool, Rev. G. F.      | 176       | Simonds, Alvan, 4,     | 217, 236     |
| Moody, Ehizir          | 287           | Poole, Maxwell        | 130       | Simonds, Joseph H.     | 4            |
| Moore, James           | 130           | Pope, Benjamin        | 183, 184, | Simonds, Mary B.       | 165          |
| Moore, John            | 24            |                       | 186       | Slane, P. F.           | 214, 215     |
| Morgan, Charles        | 181           | Pope, John            | 24        | Sloan, Samuel W.       | 236          |
| Moseley, Thomas        | 68, 75,       | Pope, John B.         | 130       | Smed, widow            | 24           |
|                        | 279           | Porter, Rev. Chas. S. | 149,      | Smith, George          | 237          |
| Mosely, John           | 27            | 167, 316              |           | Smith, Horace          | 186          |
| Mudge, Rev. James      | 176           | Porter, Rev. James    | 176       | Smith, John            | 24           |
| Munnings, Edward       | 24            | Porter, Rev. Dr.      | 155, 156, | Smith, Joseph          | 236, 313     |
| Munroe, Thomas         | 78            |                       | 157       | Smith, Lewis           | 220          |
| Murphy, Mr.            | 79, 80        | Porter, Gen.          | 108       | Smith, widow           | 27           |
|                        |               | Pratt, Mr.            | 65        | Southard, D. A.        | 139, 142     |
| Nash, Mary             | 286           | Preston, William      | 24        | Southard, Zibeeon      | 236          |
| Nash, Timothy          | 286           | Price, Daniel         | 24        | Southcoat, Capt.       | 12, 13       |
| Naylor & Co.           | 212           | Price, Rev. I. H.     | 160       | Souther, John          | 210          |
| Neale, Rev. R. H.      | 170           | Price, Rev. Dr.       | 246       | Spear, Aaron           | 78           |
| Newbury, Thomas        | 24            | Proctor, George       | 24        | Spear, Lemuel          | 78           |
| Newcombs, Messrs.      | 96            | Proctor, John         | 236       | Spiller, Ober          | 130          |
| Newman, Henry          | 78            | Purchase, widow       | 24        | Spinney, Samuel R.     | 220,         |
| Nickerson, David       | 130, 313      |                       |           | 227, 236               |              |
| Nickerson, Frederick   | 220           | Quincy, Hon. Josiah   | 149       | Sprague, Matthew, Jr.  | 184          |
| Nickerson, F. A.       | 183           |                       |           | Squeb, Capt.           | 9, 13        |
| Niles, John            | 24            | Rand, Mr.             | 71        | Squire, Rev. Edw.      | 178, 316     |
| Norton, Rev. Mr.       | 156           | Read, William         | 24        | Stearns, Josiah A.     | 135, 136,    |
| Noyes, George N.       | 236           | Reed, Caleb           | 254       | 139, 150               |              |
| Noyes, Nicholas        | 235           | Reed, Edward          | 212       | Stebbins, John Bliss   | 235          |
|                        |               | Reed, John            | 47, 70    | Stetson, Alpheus       | 235          |
| Oldham, John           | 12            | Reed, John H.         | 211       | Stevens, Rev. Abel     | 175          |
| Oliver, Francis J.     | 91, 98        | Reed, Rev. R. W.      | 181       | Stevens, Geo. A.       | 130          |
| Orne, Judge            | 91            | Rice, Alexander H.    | 149       | Stevens, Ingolls & Co. | 216          |
| Osborn, David W.       | 130           | Richards, Thomas      | 24        | Stevens, Serial        | 235          |
| Otis, Harrison Gray    | 72,           | Richardson, Jeffrey   | 271       | Stoughton, Mr.         | 24           |
| 76, 247, 248, 288,     | 291           | Richardson, Thomas    | 234       | Stoughton, Mrs.        | 27           |
|                        |               | Richmond, Rev. Dr.    | 157       | Stover, Theophilus     | 236          |
| Page, George           | 235           | Rigby, Joseph         | 24        | Strong, Gov.           | 84, 105, 292 |
| Page, William P.       | 120           | Robbins, Edward       | 73        | Sumner, Increase       | 70           |
| Parker, James          | 24            | Robbins, Rev. S.      | 181       | Sumner, Wm.            | 24, 27, 50   |
| Parker, R. G.          | 159           | Robinson, Maj. James  | 75        | Swift, Obadiah         | 27, 29       |
| Patten, Mr.            | 27            | Robinson, James, Jr.  | 279       | Swift, Thomas          | 24           |
| Patton, Rev. Wm. W.    | 167           | Robinson, Mrs.        | 172       | Sylvester, P. A.       | 216          |
| Patton, Rev. Dr.       | 167           | Rogers, E. H.         | 130       |                        |              |
| Payson, Samuel         | 78            | Rogers, James B.      | 130       | Tailer, Col.           | 29           |
| Pearson, Ephraim       | 29            | Ross, Mr.             | 79        | Taylor, Robert         | 237          |
| Percy, Earl            | 51            | Rossiter, Mr.         | 13        | Taylor, Rev. E. T.     | 174, 175     |
| Perkins, S. S.         | 234, 236, 313 | Russell, Benjamin     | 85        | Temple, James          | 78           |
| Perkins, Thomas H.     | 188,          | Russell, James D.     | 184, 237  | Thacher, Benjamin      | 130          |
| 189, 253               |               | Russell, Luther       | 215       | Thacher, Geo. C.       | 207, 208,    |
| Philbrick, John D.     | 149           |                       |           | 254                    |              |
| Phillips, John         | 24, 166       | Samford, Thomas       | 24        | Thacher, Geo. T.       | 130          |
| Phillips, Willard      | 97            | Savage, James         | 152       | Thacher, Irene S.      | 131          |
| Phipps, James L. & Co. | 216           | Savage, Rev. J. A.    | 176       | Thacher, Thomas        | 207          |
| Pickering, D. N.       | 210           | Searle, Rev. Addison  | 159       | Thacher, Wm. S.        | 131, 183,    |
| Pierce, Franklin       | 143           | Sears, Barnas         | 145       | 236                    |              |
| Pierce, John           | 24            | Sension, Matthew      | 24        | Thayer, Benjamin       | 184          |



Thayer, Catherine	150	Walton, Nancy P.	136	Wilkins, Bray	24
Thayer, Rev. Mr.	161	Ward, Gen.	55, 57	Wilks, Bro.	26
Thom, Isaac, 156, 165,	235	Wareham, Rev. John	9,	Wilmarth, Seth	205
Thom, Sophia	165		10, 13, 18	Wing, Rev. Otis	169
Thomas, John	228	Washburn, Henry S.	212	Winslow, Gen.	252, 253
Thomas, Rev. Moses G.		Washington, George,	46-64	Winthrop, Adam,	27, 29, 30
	177, 178	Way, George	24	Winthrop, Elizabeth B.	159
Thomas, Gen.	49, 219	Weeks, Annie	27	Wisner, Rev. B. B.	165
Thurston, Caleb	235	Weeks, George	24	Wiswall, Enoch	27
Tileston, Onisepherus	78	Weeks, Joseph	29	Wiswall, John	33
Tileston, Thomas	37	Wells, Rev. E. M. P.	160	Wiswall, Oliver, Capt.,	29,
Tillson, John	145, 235	Wells, William B.	131		30, 32, 284
Tolman, Ebenezer	75, 279	Wheelwright, Lot	90, 212	Wiswall, Thomas	24
Topliffe, Elder	29	Whiston, John W.	130	Wiswall, Deacon	27
Townsend, A.	91	Whitecomb, John	24	Withington, Mather	195,
Tucker, Rev. T. W.	173	White, Edward	24		198, 199
Tudor, William, 72, 75, 76,		White, H. H.	217	Withington, Richard	27,
78, 82, 247, 277, 278, 281,		White, James	27		29
	288	White, Luther L.	186	Withington, Samuel	75,
Tully, Samuel	109, 110	Whitfield, Mr.	24		279
Tuttle, Rev. E.	182	Whitman, Rev. J.	176	Withington, Mr.	24
		Whitman, Mr.	24	Wolcott, Roger	9
Upsall, Nicholas	24	Whitney, Moses	71	Wolcott, Gov.	9
		Whitney, Rev. Mr.	157	Wood, Zephaniah, 116, 154,	
Vincent, Jane	246	Whiton, E. J.	183	155, 156, 157, 163, 174	
Vinson, Thomas M.	235	Whiton, Lewis C.	236	Woodward, Ann V.	273
		Whittemore, Rev. B.	176	Woodward, Daniel	245
Wade, Richard	24	Whittemore, James F.	236	Woodward, Joseph, 72, 78,	
Wadsworth, Alexander	199	Wilder, Dr. Chas. W.	248	89, 112, 117, 118,	
Wales, Eben'r 74, 76, 279		Williams, David	78, 266	244, 273, 274	
Wales, Jerijah	29	Williams, David, Jr.	71	Wright, Albert J.	217
Wales, Nathaniel	24	Williams, Ebenezer	27	Wright, Henry	24
Wales, Thomas B.	219	Williams, John	267, 269	Wright, James	235
Walker, Moses W.	120,	Williams, Thomas	70	Wright, Richard	24
121, 123, 124, 307		Williams, Thomas, Jr.	70	Wright, William	96, 235

PROPERTY OF THE  
MAINE GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY,  
INCORPORATED 1884.





BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 06665 097 7

